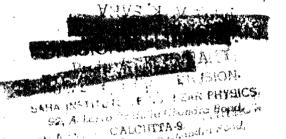
RUSSIAN GRAMMAR

BY

NEVILL FORBES, M.A., PH.D.

READER IN RUSSIAN
IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD;

SAHA INGILI JIE (F. NOTELLAR PHYSICS, 92, Acherya Philips (F. NOTELLAR PHYSICS, 92, Acherya Physics, 1915) OK.



OXFORD: AT THE CLARENDON PRESS
LONDON: AMEN CORNER, E.C.
OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS: HUMPHREY MILFOR
EDINBURGH GLASGOW NEW YORK TORONTO
MELBOURNE BOMBAY

ajit Sahas Edinburgh 31st Aug. 1949.

Prof:- A K. SAHA.

NUCLEAR FHYSICS DIVISION.

SAHA INSTITUTE OF NUCLEAR PHYSICS.

\$2, Actarya Protutta Chandra Road,

CALCUTTA-9.

DR. AJIT KUMAR SAHA
125, SOUTHERN AVENUE,
CALCUTTA-29

RUSSIAN GRAMMAR

BY

NEVILL FORBES, M.A., Ph.D.

READER IN RUSSIAN
IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD



NUCLEAR FHYSICS DIVISION.

SAHA INSTITUTE OF NUCLEAR PHYSICS.

92, Acharya Prefulla Chandra Road,

CALCUTTA-9.

OXFORD
AT THE CLARENDON PRESS
1914

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS LONDON EDINBURGH GLASGOW NEW YORK TORONTO MELBOURNE BOMBAY HUMPHREY MILFORD M.A. PUBLISHER TO THE UNIVERSITY

Prof:- A K SAHA. NUCLEAR PHYSICS DIVISION SAHA INSTITUTE OF NUCLEAR PHYSI 92, Acharya Prafulla Chandra Road,

CALCUTTA-9.

PREFACE

THE accompanying volume is a practical rather than a scientific grammar. It is intended for the use of those students who are working under a teacher able to explain the difficulties of the language to them, and also for the use of those who are working at the language by themselves with the object of being able to read it; but it does not profess to be an adequate means of teaching any one working alone how to speak Russian.

As it is an elementary book, philological references and comparisons and etymological explanations have been avoided, in order not to discourage the beginner.

The most important points of the syntax that could be included in a book of this size have been mentioned, not in a part by themselves, but incorporated in the morphology.

I wish to thank Dr. Henry Bradley and Mr. Daniel Jones for the help which they have kindly given me with regard to one or two points of detail, particularly in those parts dealing with pronunciation. Syntactical examples have been gathered from the works of Pushkin, Gogol, Goncharov, and Garshin.

NEVILL FORBES.

Oxford, June, 1914.

Prof.—A. K. SAHA NUCLEAR PHYSICS DIVISION SAHMINSTITUTE OF NUCLEAR PHYSICS SALANDISP PHYSICAL SALANDISP PHYSICAL SALANDISP PARA

BIBLIOGRAPHY

A. ACCENTED TEXTS.

- Russian Reader. By Boyer and Speranski; adapted by S. N. Harper. Published by the University of Chicago Press, 1906. Agents: Cambridge University Press.
- Russische Literatur. Vols. I and II, selections from Russian authors; edited, with notes in German, and accented, by Dr. Erich Boehme. Published in the Sammlung Göschen (vols. 403-4), Göschen'sche Verlagshandlung. Leipzig, 1908-9.
- Russische Chrestomathie für Anfänger. By Dr. Oskar Asboth. Leipzig, F. A. Brockhaus, 1903.
- Russische Meisterwerke mit Akzenten (accented texts of Russian masterpieces). By L. v. Marnitz. Published by Raimund Gerhard, 12 Lessingstrasse, Leipzig. (N.B. These are published in two editions, one containing the texts alone, the other containing texts and commentary; the texts of Turgenev in this edition must be used with care as they are not always correctly accented.)
- Phycicie Hucamenu (Russian Authors). An accented chrestomathy of Russian literature with explanatory notes in Russian. Two vols. By V. Martýnovski. Published by Y. Bashmakóv, St. Petersburg, 1908–10.

The following books are also accented:

- Русское Эхо (Russian Echo). By Kavraiski. Published by Wilhelm Violet, Stuttgart.
- Máленькій Русскій (The Little Russian). By O. Pirrss. Published by J. Bielefeld, Karlsruhe, Baden, 1905.
- Podnou Mips (Our Own World). A book for the use of non-Russian children in Russian elementary schools. In three

parts. Ву И. Давись (Davis). Published by Зихманъ (Zikhman), Riga, 1908.

B. DICTIONARIES, ETC.

- Pocket Dictionary of the English and Russian Languages. By S. W. Linden and Dr. Th. Kawraisky. Published by Otto Holtze's Nachfolger, Leipzig, 1909.
- Complete English-Russian and Complete Russian-English Dictionary.

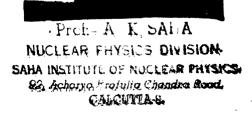
 Two vols. By A. Alexandrow. Published by the General Staff Office, St. Petersburg, 1899-1904.
- Толковый словарь Живаю великорусскаю языка (Explanatory Dictionary of the living Great Russian Language). By Dal. In four vols., 3rd edition, edited by Professor Baudouin de Courtenay. Published by Wolff, St. Petersburg, 1903-9.
- Les racines de la langue russe. By Leger and Bardonnaut. Published by J. Maisonneuve, Paris, 1894.
- Das russische Zeitwort (The Russian Verb). An alphabetical list of Russian verbs, giving their imperfective and perfective aspects, accented. By A. Garbell. Published separately as part of the Methode Toussaint-Langenscheidt. Langenscheidtsche Verlagsbuchhandlung, Berlin.

C. GRAMMARS, ETC.

- Grammaire raisonnée de la langue russe. By Gretsch-Reiff-Leger. 4th edition. Published by Maisonneuve, Paris, 1878.
- Morphologie des aspects du verbe russe. By A. Mazon. Published by Librairie Honoré Champion, Paris, 1908.
- Emplois de aspects du verbe russe. By A. Mazon. Published by Librairie Honoré Champion, Paris, 1914.
- L'accent tonique dans la langue russe. By Gaston Pérot. Published in Travaux et Mémoires de l'Université de Lille. Tome IX. Mémoire No. 26. Lille, 1900.
 - ntuation du verbe russe. By Paul Boyer. (Centenaire de recole des langues orientales vivantes. Recucil de mémoires publié par les professeurs de l'école.) Imprimerie Nationale, Paris, 1895.
- Russische Grammatik, Russisches Lesebuch mit Glossar, Russisch-Deutsches Gesprüchsbuch. All three by Professor Dr. Erich

Berneker, and published as vols. 66-8 in the Sammlung Göschen. Göschen'sche Verlagshandlung, Leipzig.

- Die Lehre vom russischen Accent. By Dr. L. Kayssler. Berlin, 1866.
- Русская грамматика (Russian Grammar). By Vostókov. 12th edition. St. Petersburg, 1874.
- Истори́ческая ру́сская грамма́тика (Historical Russian Grammar). By Busláyev. Two vols., 4th edition. Moscow, 1875.
- Филологическия разыскиния (Philological Researches). By Grot. 4th edition. St. Petersburg, 1899.
- Общій курсь русской грамматики. By V. A. Bogoróditsky. Published by the University Press, Kazan, 1904.
- Курсъ грамматики русскаго языка. 1: Фонетика. Ву V. A. Bogoróditsky. Warsaw, 1887.



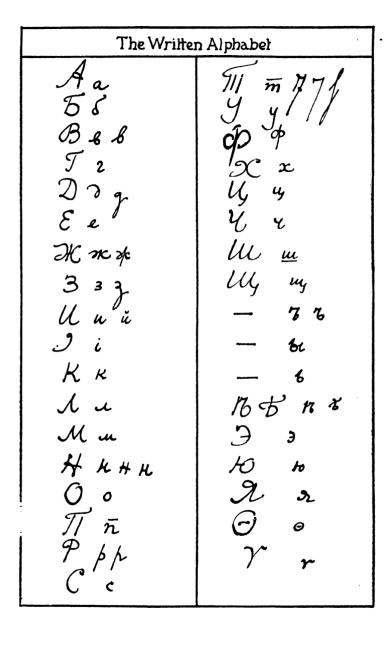
CONTENTS

_		_									1.1	.GE
I	Bibli	ography .	•	•	•	•	•	•	٠	•	•	5
		an Characters a	ınd	Writin	ıg	•	•	•	•	•	12,	13
	§ 1.	Orthography	•	•		•	•	•	•	•	•	15
		History of the		habet			•	•	•	•	•	15
	§ 2.	The Alphabet		•		•					•	17
	§ 3.	Pronunciation						•		•		19
		Hard Vowels										19
	•	a									•	20
	§ 5.	Э										20
	§ 6.	ы										21
	§ 7.	0		•								21
	§ 8.	y										21
	§ 9.	ъ										22
		Soft Vowels										
3		វា										23
Ş	11.	е В (ё)										23
	12.	น (n i v)										26
	13.	10		-			•					28
•	14.	ь										28
3		The Consonant	s	•			-					
8	15.	6										31
	16.	В	•	•	٠	•	•	•	·	·		31
	17.	• "r	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	·		32
	18.	д	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	33
	19.	ж	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	34
٠,	20.	3	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	34
	217.		•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	35
		ĸ	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	35
		Τ.	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	36
	23.	M	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	
	24.	н	•	•	٠	•	•	•	•	•	•	36
Š	25.	п	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	37
	26.	P	•	•	•	•	. •	•	•	•	•	37
Z	97	C										38

CONTENTS										9
									PA	GE
§ 2 8.	T .	٠.				÷	•	•	•	38
§ 29.	ф.	•			•		•	•		39
§ 30.	х .	•			•	•	•	•		39
§ 31.	ц.	•						•	•	39
§ 32.	. Р						•			40
§ 33.	ш.	•		•	•					40
§ 34.	щ.	•								40
§ 35.	θ.			•			•			41
	Phonetic transcrip	ption o	of so	unds	•					41
	The Accent .		•				•	•	•	43
§ 38.	Declension of Sub	stanti	ves			•		•		44
§ 39.	Masculine Nouns	in -ъ, ·	-ь, -ì	i.						45
§ 40.	Feminine ,,	in -a, -	R							49
§ 41.	Neuter "	in -0, -1	e.							51
§ 4 2.	Feminine ,,	in -1,								53
§ 43.	Neuter ,,	in -sr								54
§ 44.	Note on terminat	ions of	Sub	stanti	ves					55
	Diminutives .	•								56
§ 46.	Declension of Pro	onouns								58
•	Personal	,,								58
§ 47.	Possessive	,,								60
-	T	;								62
	Relative and Inte		ive	Prono	uns					64
	Definitive Pronou									67
•	Indefinite ,,									68
o .	Declension of Adj	ectives	s .							71
§ 53.	Hard	,,								72
§ 54.	Soft	••								77
•	Possessive	,,								80
	Note on terminati		Adi	ective	· g					82
	Comparison of Ad					·	i			83
7	The Predicative C			٠.	•	·	•	·	·	83
8.58.	The Attributive	omj.w		٠.	•	•	•	•	·	86
	The Superlative	,,		•	•	•	•	•	•	87
	The Numerals.	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	88
2. 00.	Cardinal and Ordi		•	rale	•	•	•	•	•	88
8 61	Declension and us				· la	•	•	•	•	89
						•	•	•	•	94
	Cardinal Numbers	5 III U0	mp	SILION	•	•	•	•	•	94
ÿ 00.	Ordinal Numbers	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	IJ#

										PAGE
		Distributive Num		•		•				. 95
		Multiplicative Nu		8	•	•		•		. 95
•		Collective Numera	ıls	•		•		•	•	. 96
		Fractions .	•	•					•	. 97
		Expression of Tin		•			•			. 98
Ş	69.	Expression of Mo	ney-V	alues		•			•	. 103
		The Adverb .		•	•		•		•	. 104
		Adverbs of Place							•	. 106
	72.	" Time	•	•				•		. 108
Ş	73.	,, Manne	r.							. 109
Ş	74 .	,, Degree	and (Quant	ity					. 111
		Note on the comp	arisor	of A	dver) S				. 114
ş	75.	Particles and Con	juncti	ons						. 115
ş	76.	Questions and Ans	swers							. 116
§	77.	Negations .								. 117
Ś	78.	Subordinative Cor					•			. 118
		The Prepositions	and t	he U	se of	the	Case	s wit	h and	i
		without Preposition	ons							. 118
ş	79.	Alphabetical list of	of Pre	positi	ons					. 118
§	80.	The Nominative							•	. 120
§	81.	The Genitive .								. 120
Ş	82.	The Dative .								. 128
Š	83.	The Accusative								. 132
Š	84.	The Instrumental								. 138
		The Locative .								. 143
\$	86.	The Verb .								. 146
8	87.	The Present .								. 147
Ş	88.	Present Regular V	erbs,	Classe	es I a	nd II				. 150
		Present Irregular								. 161
Ş	90.	The Past .								. 162
Ş	91.	The Future .								. 167
5	92.	The Conditional								. 167
	2.2	The Imperative								. 168
		Lin Infinitive								. 170
	.	the Gerund .								170
,	96.	The Participles: F	resen	t Pari	ticipl	e Act	ive			. 172
	97.		ast		,,	,				172
;	98.		resent		,,		sive		. ,	172
(90		ast		• •					173

			(CONT	ENT	8					11
										P	AGE
Ì	100.	The Reflex	ive V e rb		•				•		175
Ì	101.	The uses of	f the Verb								176
		The Aspect	ts								
Ş	102.	Use of the									179
ş	103.	,,	Past .			•					182
Ì	104.	,,	Future								186
Ş	105.	,,	Conditions	ıl.							189
į	106.	,,	Imperative					•			192
Ş	107.	11	Infinitive		•		•				195
Ş	108.	,,	Gerund								199
Ş	109.	"	Participle	в.					•		200
į	110.	11	Reflexive	V erb	and	the e	expre	ssion	of t	he	
		Passive									202
ì	111.	Impersonal	l Verbs .								204
;	112.	How to ex	press the v	erb to	be .						206
Ş	113.	Various for	ms of Imp	erfect	tive a	nd P	erfec	tive \	Ve rbs		209
Ş		Perfective									217
		Imperfecti			erbs						219
		Simple Im				two	form	18.			221
		Anomalous									228
•		Preposition		nsitin	n wit	h ver	ha n	onne	& c	•	231
5	0.	[, 5010101	comp		17 - 0	101	~~, 11	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	,	•	201



Russian as Written

УПольковы шолвить устыла, Deeple muxoneko zaexpunrela, U be communy brodume yaps, mosoko mon rocydasto Bo bee breuer sagrobopa Our comosur riozado zadopa, Part Tocard their To beauty Tomolonach emy. "30 pab combyu, Khaomas depluya, Tobepuns our, Eyde yapuya, U podu boramospil Min us nexcoon central pa."

(Tyunxusur)

CORRIGENDA

- p. 21, line 19 (last line but two of § 6), omit 'and щ'
- p. 64, line 25, read то же время
- p. 107, line 32, read ни было
- p. 108, line 6, read ни было
- р. 175, line 13, read тереть
- p. 199, line 14, read Bamb
- p. 201, line 8, read -mit
- p. 212, line 1, read class II

1718 Forbes Russian Grammar Jan. 1915

Face p. 14

ORTHOGRAPHY

§ 1. History of the Alphabet.

THE alphabet used by the Russians and by the other Slavs of the orthodox confession, Servians and Bulgarians, for the rendering of the sounds of their language is that known as the Cyrillic (киридлица). It is so called because its composition is attributed to St. Cyril (826-869), a Greek of Salonika, whose secular name was Constantine, who with his brother Methodius was commissioned by the Emperor Michael II to effect the conversion of Moravia, the Prince of Moravia having expressed a wish to see Christianity introduced into his country. Confronted with the problem how to communicate the Truth to the savages of Pannonia, he with great ingenuity elaborated an alphabet which with scientific accuracy represented the sounds of the Slavonic vernacular, so different from those of Greek. His work was facilitated by his knowledge of the Slavonic dialects current at that time in Macedonia, indeed it was on this account that he had been chosen to accomplish the task. The Slavonic language, for the transcription of whose sounds he composed his alphabet, is now generally considered to have been Old Bulgarian, which was, however, quite possibly intelligible to the inhabitants of Moravia at a time when the several Slavonic languages were without doubt very far from being so divergent from one another as they are to-day. Whether it was of the alphabet now called Cyrillic that St. Cyril was the author, or of the cognate alphabet called Glagolitic, still used in remote parts of Dalmatia, is uncertain, but it is probable that of the two, the latter, the Glagolitic, which has been proved to be older than the Cyrillic and was founded on the Greek minuscule script of the ninth century, was that actually compiled by him, and was later owing to the complexity of its character almost everywhere supplanted by the alphabet now known as the Cyrillic, which, founded on the Greek majuscule

11/1

script, was much clearer than the Glagolitic. The Cyrillic is the only alphabet the use of which the Russians have ever known, and it is not unnatural that its origin should have been attributed to the man who was the first to put down any Slavonic dialect in black on white, and has ever since been regarded as the fountain of their enlightenment by all Slavs of the Eastern faith. The art of writing was introduced into Russia simultaneously with Christianity in the tenth century, and the Cyrillic alphabet was imposed upon the country with as much vigour as the new religion, but with far less regard for local conditions. The alphabet had been an admirable instrument for rendering Old Bulgarian, but the phonology of that language was then already very different from that of Russian. Old Bulgarian (called in Russian 'Church-Slavonic'), however, immediately established itself as the language of the church, a position it still holds with quite inconsiderable modifications to-day; it became the only approved medium of expression for all literary work, and, though it could not remain altogether free from the influences of the vernacular Russian, especially in works of a secular character, yet the alphabet itself took such firm root, that no attempts to alter it have been successful. Of the influence of Old Bulgarian, or Church-Slavonic, on the grammatical forms and vocabulary of Russian, mention will be made later. Here it is only necessary to remind the student that the discrepancies between Russian as it is written and Russian as it is spoken, the illogicalness of Russian orthography, which owes its quaint charm to a sense of historical tradition and recalls that of our own language, and consequently much of the difficulty experienced in mastering Russian, are all due to the fact that the Cyrillic alphabet was not originally made for that language. It is necessary in every language to submit to certain conventions, and it is doubtful whether those which regulate the orthography of the Western Slavonic languages, e.g. Polish and Czech, which use a distorted Latin alphabet, are more rational and less formidable than those which govern Russian. Besides Sanskrit, the only language which has a really scientific alphabet, in which every letter corresponds exactly and without help of accents to the sound it is intended to represent, is Servian, where there was no historical tradition strong enough to obstruct reform. The Cyrillic alphabet is based on that

кa

эль

of the Greek majuscule script but contains important additional signs, the origin of which is not known, representing sounds which never existed in Greek. Its directly Greek origin is apparent in the quite unnecessary incorporation in it of hra (n), lora (i). and ε ψιλόν (v), which all had exactly the same value in Greek as it was spoken in the ninth century, viz. i, and in the necessity of inventing a separate sign for b (B 6), because the Greek β was in the ninth century only pronounced as v. except after m. e.g. \auβάνω, while in Old Bulgarian b never followed on a nasal consonant. The Cyrillic characters, which were originally very plain. but had by the eighteenth century assumed somewhat complicated and unwieldy shapes, were by Peter the Great simplified for the requirements of modern printing and at the present time have the following appearance:

The Alphabet.

PRINT	CED	ITA	LIC	TRANSLITERATED	NAME
A -	a.	· A	a	а	a
В	6	Б	б	b	6 e
В	В	\boldsymbol{B}	в	$oldsymbol{v}$	ве
\mathbf{r}	r	$oldsymbol{arGamma}$	ŧ	g	re

re Д d до же 3 3 3 30 H u i^2 i сь точкой (= i with й съ краткой (= і with a short quantity)

k

Į

I

K

Л

δ 2.

¹ After vowels, also after a and b, both e and a are transliterated

The very common adjectival terminations -will and -ift are transliterated by the one letter y.

These four letters, й ъ ы ь, are never initial.

PRIN	TED	ITA	LIC	TRANSLITERATED	NAME -
M	M	M	ж	m	эмъ
H	H	\boldsymbol{H}	н	n	энъ
0	0	0	0	o	0
п	п	П	n	$oldsymbol{p}$	пе
P	p	\boldsymbol{P}	p	r	эръ
\mathbf{C}	c	$\boldsymbol{\mathit{C}}$	c	8	эсь
${f T}$	T	\boldsymbol{T}	m	t	TO
\mathbf{y}	y	\boldsymbol{y}	y	16	У
Φ	ф	Φ	Þ	f	æþc
X	x	X	\boldsymbol{x}	kh ¹	xa
ц	ц	Ц	ч	ts	це
Ч	P	¥	¥	ch	9P
Ш	ш	Ш	u	sh	ша
Щ	щ	Щ	214	shch	ща
ъ	P 3	\mathcal{I}	ъ	[omitted in trans- literation, cf. § 9]	еръ
Ы	H 3	Ы	u	y	еры́
Ь	P ₃	Ь	b	[usually omitted in transliteration, cf. § 14]	ерь
ъ	ъ	Ē	ть	e 3	ять
Э	Э	Э	э	e	э оборо́тное (= turned round)
Ю	ю	ю	ю	yu^4	ю
Я	я	Я	я	ya 4	я
θ	θ	0	θ	f	опта́
V	Y	V	r	i	ижица
		The nl	are.	of v is taken in Russian	hy vo

The place of x is taken in Russian by Kc.

Initial x is transliterated h.
 See note 3 on p. 17.
 See note 1 on p. 17.
 After i, w and a are transliterated u and a.

PRONUNCIATION

§ 3. The Vowels.

There are ten vowels in Russian, five hard and, corresponding to these, five soft or palatalized, and two so-called mute vowels, one hard and one soft. A soft or palatalized vowel means a hard vowel preceded by the sound of the English letter y in such a way as to make a monophthong; e.g. the sound contained in the English words you or yew is really a palatalized u. This process of turning a hard into a soft vowel is called palatalization and plays a very important part in Russian. Whenever a soft or palatal vowel is preceded immediately by a consonant, the latter is affected by the y-sound of the palatal vowel and coalesces with it, the result being a softened or palatalized consonant. A consonant followed by a palatal vowel is pronounced differently from one followed by a hard vowel, though the effect of the palatal vowel is much greater on some consonants than on others, while the effect of certain palatal vowels is greater than that of others.

Further, a palatal vowel sometimes affects the pronunciation of a hard vowel in the preceding syllable, though here again certain palatal vowels particularly affect certain hard vowels.

The pronunciation of the vowels is further influenced by the position of the accent. The Russian is a stress accent and is mobile, i.e. it can fall on any syllable. There are certain rules for the placing of the accent, but as they are positively riddled with exceptions, it is far more difficult to learn them from a book than by ear or by reading accented texts; they have therefore been omitted in this grammar, the accent itself, however, of course being marked in the case of each word mentioned.

§ 4. Hard Vowels.

The five hard vowels are

9 M O A

and the mute vowel b.

$\mathbf{A} \mathbf{a} = a$

when accented and not followed by a palatal vowel (sc. with an intermediate consonant) is pronounced somewhat as in father but is more like the a in the French ma = mu (f.), or in the German e. g. да = yes, páно = early, мало = little (adverb). When not accented (and not followed by a palatal vowel) it is of the same quality as accented a only much shorter, e.g. pacora = If, however, it precedes the accent by more than one syllable, or if, following the accent, it is itself followed by a hard vowel, then it is pronounced like the obscure vowel in English, i.e. like the first a in paternal or like er in order, e. g. тарака́нъ = cockroach, облако = cloud. Accented and unaccented a, when followed in a subsequent syllable by a palatal vowel, is pronounced much sharper, more like a in the French word Espagne, e.g. in such words as Италія = Italy (pronounced as Italians pronounce Italia), далеко = far, даю = I give. For the pronunciation of accented a when followed by the soft mute vowel b, cf. § 14. Initial a is very rare in Russian.

§ 5. $\partial a = e$

(called in Russian э оборо́тное = turned round) occurs only in two or three genuinely Russian words (in which it is always accented) as a demonstrative prefix, but is common in words of foreign origin. Its pronunciation depends on whether it is followed in the next syllable by a hard or a soft (palatalized) vowel. If the vowel in the following syllable is hard, e.g. in the word one this (N.), 3 is pronounced very open and has the value of e, ai, or a at they are pronounced respectively in the English words ere, air, or fare in the South of England. If the vowel in the following syllable is soft (e.g. n = i) o is pronounced like a in the Northern English hate, e.g. on = these (M.F.N.), but with the lips still closer together. In foreign words o has the value of e in the English word end, e.g. эрмитажь = the hermitage, экземплирь = copy, specimen, Эдуа́рдь = Edward, when unaccented; if accented. it is liable to the same changes as the demonstrative pronominal prefix mentioned above, e.g. noorb = poet, but noorb = poet (locative case): in the first case a is pronounced open, as in aro, in the second more closed, as in эти.

δ 6. 'Ы ы = y

This is the vowel the pronunciation of which causes most difficulty to foreigners, but less to Britons than to Germans or Frenchmen, because a sound very much like it exists in English. Its approximately correct pronunciation is best attained by saving with clenched teeth the syllables containing y i in the following English words: Whitby, till, mill, rill, sill, sandy. Russian words with similar syllables are, e.g. $6 \text{MIT}_b = he was$, TM = thou, MM = we, рыль = he dua, сынь = son, лымь = smoke. The pronunciation of ы is comparatively little affected by being unaccented or by The ы in e.g. была, she was, scarcely subsequent soft vowels. differs at all from that in быль. The ы in e.g. были = they were (where it is followed by the soft vowel u) is pronounced not quite so thickly, but must still be pronounced with clenched teeth. It is important not to confuse the vowel y now adopted to transliterate ы in English with the semi-vowel y which denotes palatalization. ы is never initial, and cannot stand after к. г. х. ж. ч, ш, or щ after which letters its place is always taken by н. It is important to notice, however, that after m, m, and m the vowel и is pronounced like ы except when followed by ь or by a palatal vowel in the next syllable.

§ 7. 0 0 = 0

has the value, when accented, of the Italian o in Roma, much opener than the English o in shore, and more like the aw in saw. Examples: oht = he, πόνια = at home. When unaccented the quality of o is entirely changed, and it is pronounced like unaccented a (cf. § 4), i.e. like the obscure vowel in English, i.e. like the first a in paternal, or like the er in order, e.g. in the words πορά = time, ποροιιό = all right, πόροσο = dear (adv.), in all of which it sounds much more like an a than an o. This peculiarity of Russian as spoken in Moscow and to the west and south of that city explains the old English rendering of Μοκκβά (Μοςοιο) by Muscovy. Thể effect of a soft vowel on o in a preceding syllable is very marked; the palatalization is anticipated and o is pronounced almost like of in English oil, e.g. in 6όπι = pains.

§ 8. $\mathbf{y} = \mathbf{u}$

when accented is pronounced like English oo in boot, e.g. ýtka = duck, morý = I can, ýmhmi = clever; when unaccented it is

shorter, like English oo in book, e.g. moryth = they can, uyrfhb = cast-iron. It is not affected by a subsequent soft vowel as much as are a, 3, and 0, though slight anticipation of the palatal also takes place. The reason why Russian u is written y is that the sound could only be represented in Greek by ov, which was incorporated in the Cyrillic alphabet as oy and for long written thus; these were later made into a compound letter 8, which in its turn became gradually assimilated to the Western European y, but with a different value.

б 9. Тоъ

called in Russian eph (pronounced yare, the a having the value of a in the English words ware, fare, and the r being rolled) or твёрдый знакь = the hard sign, is the hard mute vowel. This letter, at the time the alphabet was made for the Old Bulgarian language in the ninth century, had the value of a full vowel, and was pronounced like a very short u, probably like the u in the English word bulb, which value it still retains in modern Bulgarian. The letter was adopted by the Russians together with all the rest of the alphabet at the time of their conversion in the tenth century, but there is nothing to prove that there was a sound corresponding to this letter in the Russian as spoken then. though it is probable that at some earlier period the sound had existed also in Russian. In Russian as we know it this letter has never been anything more than a cipher. Its function is a purely negative one, viz. to show that the preceding consonant is not palatalized (softened) but pronounced hard, a fact which the total omission of this letter would indicate equally clearly. advertisement columns of the press, in some newspapers, and by people who either make a point of being up-to-date or wish to save time and space, it is frequently omitted, but in all printed books. in the majority of newspapers, and by most people it is still used owing to the authority of tradition and convention. To is commonest as a terminal, it is never initial, and the convention for the use of medial z is that in those words which begin with a vowel and are compounded with a preposition ending in a hard consonant, the preposition retains the ъ, е. g. объ яснение = explana. tion is written объяснение.

1.4.22

δ 10.

Soft Vowels.

The five corresponding soft or palatal vowels are

and the mute vowel b.

$\mathbf{H} \mathbf{H} = ya$

is palatalized a and when accented is pronounced like it, e.g. $\text{\'H}_{\pi\pi} = Yalta$. When it is preceded by a consonant it coalesces with it and forms a palatalized consonant, e.g. $\text{\'H}_{\pi\pi} = nurse$, where 'H has the value of gn in the French word Espagne, $\text{\'H}_{\pi\pi} = uncle$, where 'H is like dy in Rudyard.

In the syllable immediately preceding or following the accent s retains its quality but is much shorter. When preceding the accent by more than one syllable its quality changes and it is pronounced like a short i or e, e.g. part = rank, row, is pronounced $ry\dot{a}d$, nom. pl. part = $the\ ranks: ryad\dot{y}$ (cf. § 6), but part = $the\ ranks: ryad\dot{y}$ (cf. § 6), but

я never occurs after ж, ц, ч, ш, ог щ.

§ 11. E e and Ъ ь (or Пь пь)

e and h in Old Bulgarian represented two distinct sounds, e: ĕ and ħ: ē, but they are both pronounced exactly alike in Russian, where the quantitative differences between & and & have been lost. The letter в (called ять), which has two forms в and ть (h and n), is only retained thanks to historical tradition. Like ait has been abandoned in the Government telegraph service, and the words in which its use is etymologically essential have with immense difficulty to be memorized. Unaccented e and is are always pronounced ye as in yet, e.g. Ekatepina = Catherine, pron. Yekatyerina (i = Italian i); Бълградъ = Belgrade, pron. Buelgrad: ъда́ = food, pron. yedá. Accented, the pronunciation of e and ъ is affected like that of 3 (cf. § 5) by the character of the vowel in the following syllable. If followed by a hard vowel in the following syllable, by a hard terminal consonant, or if terminal themselves, they are pronounced like e in similar case, only preceded by the y semi-vowel, i.e. very open, as in English air, fare, e.g. razéra = newspaper, pron. gazyéta; yké = already, pron. uzhé; Бду = I am riding, pron. yédu; мнb = to me, pron. mnyé; выъ = I eat, pron. vém.

If followed by a soft (or palatalized) vowel accented e and ž are pronounced like ya in the word Yale, or like the English word yea, but with the lips still closer together, e.g. газе́тѣ = newspaper (dat. sing.), е́сли = if, ѣдетъ = he is riding, ей = to her, здѣсь = here. The consonants ж, ч, ш, щ absorb the y-sound inherent in e (ѣ), so that when preceded by them e sounds like э, e.g. жена́ = wife, pron. zhená; человѣкъ = human being, pron. chelavyék; ше́н = neck, pron. shéya; щена́ = cheek, pron. shcheká, though when ч and щ (which are palatal consonants) are followed by accented e (₺), the y-sound is still audible unless the words are spoken very rapidly, e.g. чѣмъ (inst. sing. of что = what) = than, pron. chyem; че́резъ = over, through, across, pron. chyéryez; щель = chink, crack, pron. shchyel' (l' = palatalized l).

$$[\ddot{\mathbf{E}} \ddot{\mathbf{e}} = yo]$$

It is a peculiarity of Russian that accented e before a hard consonant or when terminal, although in certain categories of words pronounced as stated above, yet in the majority of cases changes its quality and is pronounced like a Russian o (cf. § 7) preceded by y semi-vowel. This vowel which is really a palatalized o corresponding to hard o is not counted as a separate vowel and is therefore here placed in brackets. At one time it was the custom in writing and printing to differentiate this ë by placing a diaeresis over it, but as Russians know instinctively when to pronounce e as 40, such an aid was felt to be unnecessary and is now seldom used. In this book the pronunciation of e as yo is indicated throughout. As only accented e is pronounced yo, the accent is in these cases omitted and replaced by the diagresis. Examples: cenó = village, pron. syeló; but cena = villages, pron. syóla; échu = if (u is a soft vowel and softens or palatalizes the preceding consonant, therefore e retains its original value), but ёлка = spruce-tree, pron. yólka (a is a hard vowel); ве́село = cheerful (adv.), pron. vyésyelo (e is a soft vowel and palatalizes the c, therefore the first e retains its original value), but весёдая = cheerful (nom. sing. F.), pron. vyesyólaya (because although s is soft. yet the vowel which immediately follows accented e is hard). Accented e followed by a consonant + 1 is also pronounced wo as b has the value of a hard vowel, e.g. But = he led. pron. evol: нёсь = he brought, pron. nyós; ёжь = hedgehog, pron. yósh (cf. § 19).

Terminal accented e is always pronounced yo except in the one word væé mentioned above, e. g. eë = her (acc. sing. from ona), pron. ueuó: Moë = mu (nom. acc. sing. N.), pron. mauó. Just as e. although followed by a hard consonant and vowel, is nevertheless in many cases not pronounced uo (cf. p. 23), so conversely it is pronounced we in many cases where it is not to be expected, i. e. although followed by a soft or palatalized consonant and vowel; such cases are entirely due to analogical influence; e.g. ведёмъ = we are leading, pron. vyedyóm, has by its analogy caused ведёте = you are leading, to be pronounced vuedvotue, although the accented e is followed by palatalized consonant and soft vowel e; телёнокъ = calf. pron. tyeluónak, and телёнкв = calf (loc. sing.), pron. tyelyónkye, influenced by the e in the nom. and in all the other cases, although followed by the soft vowel to ropon = hill, pron. gardyu (instr. sing. of F. decl. in -a), has influenced землёю = earth, pron. zyemlyóyu (instr. sing. of F. decl. in -s) although followed by the soft vowel $x_0 = yu$. In cases where there is no analogical influence, accented e before a soft vowel or palatalized consonant is pronounced ye, as would be expected, e.g. III epenérebb = Sheryemyétyev, moén = instr. sing. F. from mon = my.

The consonants ж, ч, ш, щ absorb the y-sound inherent in ë, so that when preceded by them ë sounds just like o, e.g. жёнь (= gen. pl. from жена́ = wife), pron. zhon; чёмь (loc. sing. from что = what), pron. chom; шёль (= past tense of ндти = to go), pron. shol; ещё = more, pron. yeshchó, colloquially often ishchó.

On the analogy of accented e followed by a hard consonant and vowel being pronounced yo, accented & followed by a hard consonant and vowel is also in certain cases pronounced yo, a result of the two letters being pronounced identically. & is thus prenounced in the following words: chan = saddles (nom. sing. chan), rhead = nests (nom. sing. rhead), shead = stars (nom. sing. shead), upicophit = obtained (past tense from upicophic), uphate = blossomed (past tense from uphate), had saheyatinh = narked (part. pass. from saheyatinh). Even accented a is in three cases pronounced yo, owing again to the confusion caused by the similarity in the pronunciation of unaccented e, h, and a; the three words in question are: thick = shook (past tense from the three (gen. sing. from oha). In

all these cases unaccented e, \hbar , and π are short vowels of very uncertain quality; they vary from $\check{\alpha}$ to $\check{\epsilon}$ and $\check{\epsilon}$, hence the confusion in the pronunciation of certain words where they bear the accent.

These four letters represent only one sound, which is that of the Italian i, and the reasons for their existence and for the continuance of their use are purely conventional and traditional.

н (sometimes called и просто́е = simple i)

is by far the most common of the four; it is used (i) at the beginning of words, if followed by a consonant; (ii) in the middle of words, if preceded and followed by a consonant; (iii) in the middle of words, if it is preceded by a vowel but at the same time begins a fresh syllable itself; and (iv) at the end of words if it stands as a single vowel, or if, preceded by another vowel, it forms a fresh syllable itself.

Ħ.

called H CE RPÁTROÑ (=i with a short quantity), is only used after another vowel when it forms one syllable (i.e. a diphthong) with it, therefore never at the beginning of words.

1,

called n c5 róincit (= i with a dot), is only used before another vowel when it does not form one syllable with it, therefore never at the end of words.

٧,

called \dot{n} xuua (= little yoke), dim. of \dot{n} ro = yoke), is a transcription of the Greek υ (upsilon), which in late Greek acquired the value of short i. In modern Russian it is only used in a few ecclesiastical words of Greek origin, and its place even in these is often taken by n.

и being a palatal (or soft) vowel always affects the pronunciation of a preceding consonant, though the y-sound which comes between it and a preceding consonant is not always so clearly audible as it is in the case of e. The influence of и also extends further back than the consonant immediately preceding it, and affects the pronunciation of the vowel in the preceding syllable (cf. examples of the pronunciation of hard vowels when followed by и in the next syllable, §§ 5, 7). The consonants most

noticeably affected by a subsequent n are r (t) and r (d), r (n) and r (t), cf. the pronunciation of r = these, r 5, and of r = thild, which is pronounced dyitya, the first syllable like r in the phrase how r is do, on r = they, pron. any r; moderna, pron. maly r to difficulty which Russians have in pronouncing a clean r sound after r and r is often to be noticed in their pronunciation of certain French words, such as dites, bottines, or indeed in that of any foreign words where r and r are followed by r, in which cases they are inclined to insert a r-sound between the consonant and the vowel.

It is to be noticed that и after the consonants ж and ш is, except when followed by ь or a palatal vowel in the following syllable, pronounced like ы, i. e. it becomes hard and loses its palatal quality, e. g. жирь = fat, grease, pron. zhyr, but жизнь = life, pron. zhizn' (n' = palatalized n); широ́кій = broad (nom. sing. masc.), pron. shyroki, but шире = broader, pron. shirye. After ч and щ on the other hand и is always palatal.

Curiously enough initial n in Russian has lost its preiotization; in Russian words beginning with n, the n is pronounced i and not yi as one would expect, e.g. n = willow is pronounced iva (i = Italian i) and not yiva. The only exceptions to this are certain cases of the personal pronoun one iva iva in which initial iva is pronounced iva (iva in iva in iva

In the syllables -wit, -it, -ot, in which the nom. sing. masc. of all Russian adjectives and of very many Russian family names (which are mostly adjectival in form) end, -it is merely the second half of a diphthong and is pronounced like y in the English word boy. It is to be noticed that in diphthongs such as att and off occurring in other words the it is often barely audible, e. g. notice = go! or come! sounds like pady!, Muxatin = Michael, like Mikhal.

The effect on the pronunciation of m of the absence or the presence of the accent on it is inappreciable; its pronunciation alters merely quantitatively, not qualitatively. Similarly, m being a palatal vowel, its pronunciation, except after m, m, is not affected by the presence of another palatal vowel in any subsequent syllable.

The form of the letter u is derived from the Greek H η ($\tilde{\eta}\tau a$); it is curious to note that while the Greek H has become u in Russian, the Greek N appears in Russian as H (cf. § 24).

For ë cf. § 11.

§ 13. $IO \ 10 = yu$

is pronounced like the English word you, i.e. the Italian u preceded by the semi-vowel y, e.g. $\pi o 6\pi o$ (lyubly u) = I love, I like. The letter itself is a combination of ι $(l u \pi n)$ and o $(b \mu \kappa \rho o \nu)$. Its pronunciation is not affected by the presence or absence of the accent. ω is also used to represent French u and German u in transliteration, e.g. Epócceal Bruxelles, Húphhoppe Nurnberg.

§ 14. **Б**ь ¹

called in Russian edd or márkiñ знакъ = the soft sign, is the soft mute vowel. It is a word which is difficult both to transcribe adequately and to pronounce in English, but may be approximately rendered by yerr, pronouncing the e like the ai in the English word waist and the final r with the tip of the tongue. softening or palatalizing them by adding to them the sound of the semi-vowel y, without, however, allowing the additional sound to form an additional syllable. Like z, the hard mute vewel, it once had the value of a full vowel, and was pronounced like a very short i, but in course of time its quality changed, it lost its power of forming a syllable, and became merely the sign of palatalization of a preceding consonant. Unlike L, however, it still plays an important part in Russian orthography and pronunciation, and could not easily be dispensed with. It is the only visible indication there is of the softening or palatalization of a preceding consonant. As already mentioned, this softening or palatalization is difficult to explain in the terms of a language, such as English, in which this particular process is comparatively rare; the general effect is to add to the preceding consonant a y-sound without allowing the sound thus added to form an additional syllable. The actual sound of a palatalized consonant of course occurs frequently enough in many other languages, e.g. d is palatalized

in the English word educate, n in the Italian word ogni, l in the Spanish word llama, but the difficulty in Russian is that these palatalized consonants occur as often as not at the end of words, and it is in these cases that their pronunciation is a stumbling-block to foreigners. A further difficulty is caused by the fact that the consonant palatalized by h, or rather h itself, influences the pronunciation of a hard vowel in the preceding syllable, causing a throwing-back of the i-sound on to the preceding vowel, in German called the i-Vorschlag.

Examples of the similar effect of n on a hard vowel in a preceding syllable have already been given (cf. §§ 5, 7). A good instance of that produced by L is the name of the Russian town Харьковь, the a of which is pronounced like the ai in the word Cairo: the first syllable Xapb- is pronounced almost like the English word hire, rolling the r. Another word in which the effect of b on a preceding hard vowel is very marked is napb = tsar', in which the a is pronounced almost like the ai of Cairo; another is the name of the Siberian river Obs. commonly written in English Obi, but really a monosyllabic word, the pronunciation of which is approximately Oip (cf. § 15), oi having the value of oi in the English coin. This throwing-back of the i-sound is far more marked in the case of a and o than in that of the other hard vowels is and v. while after a the soft mute vowel never occurs. The effect of the soft mute vowel, itself a palatal, on a preceding soft or palatal vowel is most marked in the case of s and e (b), and scarcely noticeable in that of H and w: in the only case where it occurs after ö, i.e. in the 2nd sing, of the present of some verbs, it is pronounced like ъ, i.e. is omitted. An example of ь after s is the word nath = five; in this case the throwing-back of the i-sound is not so marked as in that of the corresponding hard vowel a, but is nevertheless noticeable, while the final T is softened and pronounced, e.g. like the Thi- in the French name Thiers, i. e. it is palatalized, but does not form a syllable. The difference between H followed by B and H followed by a hard vowel is very noticeable in the two words nath = fire and nato = heel: in the latter n has the value of ya in the English words yard, yarn, while in the former it is nearly as thin as the ya in Yat, though not quite. E or b followed by b is pronounced like ya in the word Yale, but with lips still closer together, e.g. ecra = there is, is pronounced approximately like yaist, i.e. like the English waist, with a palatalized t. The pronunciation of these consonants followed by b is one of the greatest difficulties for Englishmen talking Russian, and the very name of this letter—epb—is one of the hardest words in the language to pronounce correctly.

It is to be noticed that in the 2nd pers. sing. of the present of all verbs, which without exception ends in -шь, the ь has no effect at all, and the ш is pronounced hard, as if it were шъ, е. g. идёшь = thou goest, pron. idyosh; видишь = thou seest, pron. vidyish.

ь may occur in the middle as well as at the end of words. though it cannot stand at the beginning of a word. Its function is always the same, viz. to palatalize or soften a preceding consonant. Etymologically it always represents the last remains of a lost i when it occurs in Russian words, and it is also used frequently in the transcription of foreign words. The word возьму = I shall take, is pronounced approximately vaizmú or voizmú (ai as in Cairo. oi as in coin), and is of only two, not three syllables; семья = family, is pronounced syemui; быю = I hit, is pronounced byú (of course as one syllable); 450 = whose (N., interrog. pron.). chyó (as one syllable), and so on. In a number of neuter nouns ending in -e, either i or b may be used, and the pronunciation is the same, e.g. unthie or unthie = property (pronounced imvenyeusually as three, but sometimes as four syllables). L is used in the transcription of foreign words such as пьянино = an upright piano, pronounced pianino, as in Italian, and always after l in foreign words before consonants or at the end, to show that the I is to be pronounced as single I in French and not like the Russian deep l. e. g. Ольденбургь = Oldenburg, Брюссель = Brussels. may be added that the effect of b on terminal dentals, nasals, and liquid consonants is far more marked than on labials, palatals, and sibilants. a does not occur after gutturals, which become palatals before it, and is never initial.

The Consonants.

§ 15. $\mathbf{B} \ \mathbf{6} = b$

is pronounced as in English, except medial 6 before a voiceless consonant and final 6 (sc. δι οτ δι), when it becomes voiceless, i.e. p, e.g. ποδι = forehead, pron. lop; rόπyδι = pigeon, pron. gólup; rоπyбчикь = little pigeon, pron. galúpchik.

Before a palatal vowel b is palatalized (softened), though it is not as much affected by palatalization as are some other consonants; indeed in rapid speech, when unaccented, the palatalization is sometimes scarcely noticeable, e.g. 6exb = without, pron. byez (one syllable), but in rapid conversation bez, though it is of course never wrong to bring out the palatalization. It is always better to over-palatalize than to under-palatalize. Before an accented palatal vowel b is of course always palatalized, e.g. no6ha = victory, pron. pabyéda (three syllables), 6bo = I hit, pron. byu (one syllable).

Before the palatal vowel n, however, even when this is accented, the palatalization of 6 is not expressed, owing to the physical inconvenience involved in doing so, e.g. nio nr = he loves, pron. lyūbit; yōiñna = murderer, pron. ubūtsa, though it is very important to remember that the i here is pronounced like the English ee in e.g. beet, never like i in the words bit, bill. As Greek β was pronounced v at the time the Cyrillic alphabet was made, a new sign, viz. 6, had to be invented to represent b.

§ 16. B B = v

is pronounced as in English, except medial B before a moiceless consonant and final B (sc. BL or BL), when it becomes voiceless, i.e. f, e.g. pobl = ditch, pron. rof; $\pi lobob = love$, pron. lyuboif (two syllables, cf. § 14); $\kappa lob = love$, pron. lyuboif

Before a palatal vowel B is palatalized (softened), following 6 in this respect (q.v.). As in the case of 6, the extent to which the palatalization is noticeable depends very much on whether the palatal vowel is accented or not, while before the palatal vowel I

3

It is worth remarking that the word рубль = rouble, is pronounced rup, as if it ended in бь.

it is not expressed at all, even when this is accented, e.g. веснá = spring (of the year), pron. vyesná, which in rapid conversation may often sound like vesná, but въра = faith, always vyéra, the yer of which is pronounced like ierre in the French Pierre; выю = I wind, pron. vyu, like the English view; вино́ = wine, pron. vinó (i = Italian i).

In the transliteration of foreign words beginning with eu- and auto- the Greek v is in Russian represented by B, e.g. Ebréhiñ = Eugen, pron. Yevgyéni, abtomobál. = motor-car, pron. aftomobál.

The form of this letter is derived from the Greek.

§ 17.
$$\Gamma \mathbf{r} = g$$

is pronounced in various ways. Initial r is always hard, like g in the English go, when followed by a vowel or by the consonants B, I, P, H, \mathfrak{R} , 3. In the word $r\mathfrak{A}b = where$, r is usually pronounced like a voiced kh, and may be transcribed gh - ghdye, though sometimes here also as hard g or even as k. Γ is also pronounced gh in the vocative of Γ ochogh = Lord: Γ ochogh, pron. ghospodyi.

Medial r before a voiceless consonant is pronounced kh, like ch in the Scotch loch, e.g. kótth = claws, pron. kókhtyi; before a voiced consonant it is pronounced usually gh, but also sometimes g or k, e.g. kottá = when, pron. kaghdá, but also kakdá and kagdá.

Medial r before a vowel is hard, e.g. mhóro = much, pron. mnóga, but is as often as not pronounced gh, $mn \circ gha$, $mor \circ gha$ and gha is pronounced magú, but as frequently maghú. In the oblique cases of the word Born = God, r is always pronounced gh, e.g. Bory = to God. In the genitive singular masculine and neuter of all adjectives (in which connexion it is important to remember that most Russian family names are adjectives) and declinable pronouns, -aro, -ero, -oro, and -sro, r is pronounced v, e.g. eró = of him. pron. vevó: Torcróro = of Tolstói, pron. Talstóva. The reason for this is that the Old Bulgarian orthography adopted by the Russians was never altered by the latter to correspond to Russian pronunciation, which in this case differed from that of Old Bulgarian. It is a good instance to quote when Russians accuse English of being written one way and spoken another. It is important to remember that the word MHOro = much (quoted above) is not a genitive but an indeclinable pronoun, and is therefore not affected by this rule: likewise the negative немного = little.

Final r (sc. rh) is always voiceless, i.e. k, except in the word Borh = God, when it is pronounced kh as in Scotch loch, e.g. morh = I was able, pron. mok, but Borh always bokh.

r cannot be followed by ы (which it turns into и) nor by ь; r followed by a palatal vowel is pronounced hard, but with a y-sound immediately afterwards, e. g. по Волгћ (= dat. of Волга) = along the Volga (pron. Volgye), reorpáфія = geography, pron. gyeográfia, but in rapid speech the y is scarcely noticeable. In the transliteration of foreign names and words r is always used to represent h, a quaint convention established by Peter the Great; x would have been in most cases more rational. The resulting phenomena are often bizarre, e. g. B. Гюго = V. Нидо, Гаруйчъ-Гукъ-фанъ-Голландъ = Harwich—Hook of Holland, Гуль = Hull (N.B. not, as might be thought, Goole); гидрофо́бія = hydrophobia.

The form of this letter is derived from the Greek.

$\delta 18. \qquad \Lambda \Lambda = d$

The pronunciation of the dental consonants in particular is affected by the quality of the subsequent vowel. Initial and medial n before a hard vowel, also initial and medial n + B, n, M, H, p is very frequently, i.e. in the pronunciation of many people, strictly interdental, i. e. the tongue while forming the sound touches both the upper and lower teeth. The sound produced is more like the Irish d, rather than the ordinary English d, which is of course not inter-dental, but cerebral, i.e. the tongue while forming the sound touches not the teeth but the roof of the mouth. On the other hand, no aspirate is audible in the Russian A before a hard vowel. In the pronunciation of some Russians the inter-dental quality of the I before a hard wowel is not so noticeable, but as a general rule it is strictly inter-dental as opposed to our purely cerebral d. It may be remarked that it is physically easier to give the full value to the hard vowels a, o, w, v after an inter-dental than after a cerebral d, and therefore the inter-dental pronunciation for a foreigner is doubly important.

Initial and medial д before a palatal (soft) vowel is, on the other hand, not inter-dental but strongly palatalized, i.e. pronounced like dy in, e.g. the English d'you (think), e.g. дадя = uncle, pron. dyádya (only two syllables), дало = matter, pron. dyélo, Одесса

— Odéssa, pron. Adyéssa, дитя́ = child, pron. dyityé. This explains how it is that Russians, although such good linguists, sometimes mispronounce foreign words, e.g. Dickens, often pronounced Dyickens, Divonne = Dyivonne, &c. Medial д followed by the palatal vowel b+another consonant is difficult for foreigners to pronounce, e.g. седьмой = seventh, is only a disyllable, pron. syedymói, in which dy has the same quality as the d'y in d'you; it is important to remember that it is neither English d nor English j. In the imperatives бұдьте = be (2nd pl.) and ся́дьте = be seated (2nd pl.) the дь becomes as it were lost in the т, which is strongly emphasized as if it were т, so that these words (both very common) are pronounced búttye (u of course as in Italian), syáttye.

The form of this letter is derived from the Greek.

is pronounced like s in the English word measure, except when medial before a voiceless consonant and final, sc. жь от жь, when it becomes voiceless itself, i. e. sh. The effect of a palatal vowel on medial ж is to make it slightly thinner (the y-sound is scarcely noticeable), something between z and zh, though nearer to zh than to z. Examples: жена = wife, pron. zhena, жажда = thirst, pron. zhazhdu, мужики = peasants, pron. muzhiki, мужи = husband, pron. mush, ложка = spoon, pron. loshka. For the pronunciation of и, e, and ë after ж cf. §§ 11, 12. ы cannot stand after ж, which turns it into и. ь after final ж has the effect on preceding vowels described in § 14. ж is always used to represent French j, e. g. журнать = magazine (from French journal), and with д (дж) to represent English j (cf. § 18). The form of this letter is of unknown origin.

§ 20.
$$3 = z$$

is pronounced as in English, except when medial before a voiceless consonant and final, i.e. зь ог зь, when it becomes voiceless itself, i. e. s, as in sun. The effect of a palatal vowel on 3 when medial is merely to soften it by adding to it a y-sound, but in an unaccented syllable this is scarcely noticeable. Examples: 3ποκ malicious, pron. zloi, 3épkaπο = mirror, pron. zyérkala, 3μμά = winter, pron. zimá, ykáβ = decree, pron. ukas (u = Italian u), but ykáβ ο 3éματβ = a decree about the zemstvo, pron. ukáz a zyémstvye. In words where 3 is followed by κ (q. v.) the latter absorbs the former, e.g. вόβκα = reins, pron. vózhi, with emphasis on the zh. Whenever the prepositions pag-(= dis-), bog-(= up), and hug-(= down), which are only used in composition, are compounded with a word beginning with a voiceless consonant (except c), the 3 is pronounced and written as c; e. g. packóπь = dissent, pron. raskól, bockóπь = ascent, pron. vaskól, but pagckáβ = tale, pron. raskás.

The form of this letter is derived from the Greek.

§ 21. $\mathbf{K} \, \mathbf{\kappa} = k$

is pronounced as in English, except before κ , r, and r, when it is usually pronounced kh (i.e. like ch in Scotch loch). Examples: kakb = how, pron. kak; kbkb = by whom, pron. kyem (one syllable), but kbkb komý = to whom, pron. khkamú (two syllables); kbkb kro = kbkb. kbkb cannot be followed by kb (which it turns into kb) nor by kb.

§ 22. J J = l

is pronounced in two very distinct ways, according to whether it is followed by a hard or a soft (palatal) vowel. Before a hard vowel, or before a consonant followed by a hard vowel, it is pronounced as in Yorkshire or Scotland, i.e. with the tip of the tongue curling upwards, leaving a space between the tongue and the roof of the mouth. This is often called guttural l, but it is really rather cerebral than guttural. Many Russians pronounce it without touching, or barely touching, the palate with the tip of the tongue, so that it sounds like w. The Polish deep l. written in Polish 1, is almost always thus pronounced. Those Englishmen who find it difficult to pronounce the deep Russian las l, can solve the difficulty and increase the chances of being mistaken for real Russians, by fearlessly pronouncing a before hard voicels like English w, e.g. námna = lamp, pron. lámpa, wámpa (a of course as in Italian); nyhá = moon, pron. lund, wund; nobb = forehead, pron. lop, wop; aoch = reindeer, pron. lois, wois; wara = Christmastree, pron. yólka, yówka; лгунь = liar, pron. lgun, wgun; быль = he was, pron. byl, very much like the English word bill, or byw, biww; была́ = she was, pron. bylá, or bywá (y here having the sound of y in Whitby).

Before a soft (palatal) vowel, on the other hand, n is pronounced like Italian al in e.g. degli, or like Spanish ll in e.g. llama, i.e. it is palatal, formed by pressing the whole front part of the tongue against the palate. E.g. лёдь = ice, pron. lyot; ли́па = lime-tree, pron. luípa; лью = I pour, pron. luu; людн = people, pron. luúdui. Final Mb is rather difficult for Englishmen to pronounce, but the throwing-back of the i-sound, contained in the B, on to the preceding vowel is very marked and makes it easier, e.g. боль = pain, pron. very much like boil, but giving the n the value of Italian al. In followed by other consonants is still more difficult to pronounce, but it is made easier by running the preceding syllable right into it, e.g. на льду = on the ice, is pronounced approximately naildú, ai having the value of ai in Cairo, нельзя = it is impossible, pron. nyalezyá in two syllables, -yale- like the American Yale, and n having the value of Italian al. Il followed by a consonant and a palatal vowel is also pronounced like Italian gl. e. g. лже-пророкъ = false prophet, pron. lzheprarok. Foreign names ending in l are written in Russian with final ль, e.g. Брюссель = Brussels, but foreign words which are regarded as having become Russian are written with TL, e. g. KAUHTATL = capital (sc. money).

The form of this letter is derived from the Greek.

§ 23. M M = m

is pronounced as in English. Final Mb is difficult to pronounce; it is of course softened, just as m in the English word mew, but in rapid conversation this is scarcely noticeable. It is easier for foreigners to express palatalization by emphasizing the throwing-back of the i-sound, e.g. cemb = seven, pron. syame, syaim, like the English words same, aim; bócemb = eight, pron. vóisyame, which in rapid conversation becomes vóisim or vóisyem. In the syllable mu the y-sound is very difficult to express after m, even for Russians, and is therefore inaudible, e.g. mámo = past (prep.), pron. mima.

§ 24. H H = n

is pronounced as in English. The same applies to final нь as to final мь; the sound нь is, however, more familiar to Englishmen as

it is exactly the same as French and Italian gn, e. g. Boulogne is written in Russian Byrohb. In Russian words ending in 1115 the palatalization is if anything more marked than in those with final MB, and the throwing-back of the i-sound is equally marked, e. g. KOHB = steed, is pronounced koigne, like Boulogne, though in rapid conversation it sounds like the English word coin pronounced very short, just as Boulogne spoken by many Englishmen sounds like boo-loin. In the syllable hi the y-sound must always be expressed, though it is difficult for Englishmen to do so, e. g. c. HAMM = with them, is pronounced snyimi, -yi- having the sound of the English word ye.

The Russian H is derived from the Greek N. The reason why it is in Russian written H is that while the middle stroke of our N has remained sloping, the middle stroke of the same letter in Russian has become horizontal; in Old Bulgarian the letter was written H and in Russian it has become H.

§ 25. If n = p

is pronounced as in English. Palatalized Π , i. e. Π before a palatal vowel, is pronounced simply py-, as in English piano, except in the syllable $\Pi \Pi$, where it is almost impossible to express the y-sound, e.g. $\Pi ep o = pen$, pron. like the French word Pierrot, but $\Pi \Pi \Pi \Pi = he$ drank, pron. like the English word peel. Final $\Pi \Pi$ is very rare; it is difficult for an Englishman to express the D, but its effect on the preceding vowel is obvious, e.g. $\Pi \Pi \Pi \Pi = chain$, pron. tsyape (one syllable), to Pee as in English tape, but $\Pi \Pi \Pi = fluil$, pron. tsyape as in English tape, but $\Pi \Pi \Pi = fluil$, pron. tsyape as in English tepid.

The form of this letter is derived from the Greek.

§ 26. $\mathbf{P} \mathbf{p} = r$

is pronounced as in Scotland; it is always rolled with the tip of the tongue, and never under any circumstances pronounced as in English or German. Exactly the same applies to palatalized p and to ph as to palatalized n and nh, e.g. Phiánh = Ryazan, pron. Ryazagne (-gne as in French); but Phia = Riga, ri- as in English reel, but rolling the r. Medial and final ph is difficult to pronounce, but is made easier by the marked throwing-back of the i-sound, e.g. naph = tsar', pron. tsair, rolling the r(ai as in Cairo), Xáphkobh = Harkov, pron. Hairkaf (ai again as in Cairo), eph = the name of the letter h, pron. yair, rolling the r (ai as in the English word aim),

but eps = the name of the letter s, pron. yare, rolling the r (like the English word fare).

The form of this letter is derived from the Greek.

§ 27.
$$C c = s$$

is pronounced always like English voiceless s in e.g. second. Palatalized c is simply s +the y-sound, which latter is, however, inaudible in the syllable cm, e.g. chm = seed, pron. syémya, but cma = strength, pron. sila or siwa; cmm = seed, pron. sizhú. The same applies to medial and final ch as to ph and mb, e.g. móchka = pug, pron. móiska, oi as in the English word moist, though the throwing-back of the i-sound is not always so easy, e.g. Pych = the old name of Russia, pron. Rúis, in one syllable, u as oo in English, with a slight i-sound between the u and s, which gives the s a somewhat minced or affected character. After a palatal vowel the effect of final h is only noticeable in the attenuation of the s, e.g. 600ch = I fear (where -ch is the reflexive pronoun), pron. bayús; módch = I wash myself, pron. móyus; in these cases the y-sound after the final c is distinctly audible, but very difficult for foreigners to reproduce.

The form of this letter is derived from the Greek.

§ 28.
$$\mathbf{T} \mathbf{T} = t$$

The pronunciation of τ , as of π (q. v.), is particularly affected by the quality of the subsequent vowel. Initial and medial τ before a hard vowel, also initial and medial $\tau + B$, κ , π , m, m, m, m, m, also final $-\tau L$, is very frequently, i. e. in the pronunciation of many people, strictly inter-dental, i. e. the tongue while forming the sound touches both the upper and lower teeth, or at any rate it is dental, i.e. the tongue touches the tops of the upper teeth, and not cerebral as in English. As in the case of π , most foreigners will find that it is easier to give their full value to the hard vowels after a dental, than after a cerebral τ ; it is also far easier to roll the τ after dental than after cerebral π and π , e. g. $\tau \mu = three$, must on no account be pronounced like the English word tree, but like our three without h and rolling the τ .

Initial and medial T before a palatal vowel is, on the other hand, not inter-dental or dental, but strongly palatalized, i.e. pronounced like ty in e.g. let you, e.g. TÉRIO = body, pron. tyélo or tyélo; RTTÉ = to go (on foot), pron. ityi; Tebé = to thee, pron. tyebyé; TÉRIO = dark, (adv.), pron. tyómna.

Initial or medial T followed by b + a consonant is difficult to pronounce, e. g. thma = darkness, is only one syllable, pron. tymā. Final Tb is pronounced in the same way and is if anything more difficult for most beginners; it is of very common occurrence, as it is the ordinary infinitival ending, e. g. robopātb = to speak, pron. gavarīty, in three syllables, the y of course not forming a syllable, but merely palatalizing the T. This is very important, as mispronunciation alters the meaning of the word, e. g. robopatb (hard) = he speaks (8rd sing.), pron. gavarītt.

The pronunciation of final π_b and π_b is made more difficult by the fact that there is not with them, as with final π_b , μ_b , &c., any throwing-back of the *i*-sound on to the preceding vowel, e.g. $\pi_b^b \pi_a \pi_b = to$ do, must not be pronounced dyélait but dyélaty or dyéwaty (in two syllables with palatalized t); math = mother, pron. maty in one syllable with palatalized t. For Englishmen in particular it is important to remember that final π_b is neither t nor ts nor ts, but palatalized, just as it is in the English word actual; the difficulty is to pronounce the palatalized t at the end of a word with no vowel following and without letting it form an extra syllable.

The form of this letter is derived from the Greek; the italic form m (and that of the written capital) is the result of the gradual lengthening downwards of the two ends of the bar across the top of the letter T W.

§ 29. $\Phi = f$

is pronounced as in English, and occurs only in words of foreign origin, e. g. φοτότραφь = photographer, pron. fatógraf.

This letter is derived directly from the Greek.

§ 30.
$$\mathbf{X} \mathbf{x} = kh$$

is pronounced like ch in Scotch or German loch by some, but by others more like the English aspirate h. X cannot be followed by \mathbf{u} (which it turns into \mathbf{u}) nor by \mathbf{b} . It is always used to render the Greek χ (from which it is derived), e.g. apxeolória = archaeology.

§ 81. II
$$H = ts$$

is pronounced as in English lots, e. g. Царицынь (lit. Tsaritsa's or Empress's), a town on the Volga, pron. Tsaritsyn; Царское Село́

(lit. Tsar's or Emperor's village), a town near Petrograd, pron. Tsárskoye Syeló. It is also used to render the Latin c before e, i, and ae, e. g. Цицеро́нъ = Cicero, Це́зарь = Caesar.

The form of the letter is of unknown origin.

§ 32.
$$\Psi = ch$$

is pronounced as in English church, except that it is a palatal consonant, whereas ours is not. The result of this is that there is a tendency to pronounce even the hard vowels when they follow u as if they were palatal, though orthography forbids the use of n and wafter u; in practice this palatal pronunciation of the hard vowels is only noticeable when the latter are accented, e.g. uýno = wonder, miracle, is pronounced almost as if it were uóno, but in the plural uynecá the y-sound is not audible. If cannot stand after u, and it is important to remember that n after u is pronounced like the ee in cheese, not like the i in chill, e.g. in the word uncro = clean (N., sing. and adverb). e (t) after u is pronounced ye if accented, e.g. uéxob (the dramatic author), pron. Chyékhof, but when unaccented the y-sound is scarcely audible (cf. § 11). L after final u has the effect on preceding vowels already described in § 14.

The form of this letter is of Semitic origin.

§ 33. III
$$\mathbf{m} = sh$$

is pronounced as in the word *English*. Li cannot stand after m, which turns it into m. For the pronunciation of e, m, and ë after m cf. §§ 11, 12. Le after final m has the effect on preceding vowels already described in § 14, but it is important to remember that the 2nd sing. of the presents of all verbs which without exception ends in -me is always pronounced as if it were written -me.

The form of this letter is of Semitic origin.

is broadly speaking pronounced as in Ashchurch, but it is to be noticed that it is pronounced in various ways by various people. By many it is pronounced shch as described, but by many others like a very emphatic sh with a palatal quality; thus the word mn = cabbage-soup (a national dish) is by some pronounced shchi (i as in cheese), by others shyi (in one syllable, the i as in cheese).

Being a compound of m and u it is made palatal by the palatal quality inherent in u, and thus all vowels are pronounced after it as they are after u, cf. § 32. M cannot stand after m, which turns it into m. B after final m has the effect on preceding vowels already described in § 14.

The form of this letter in Old Bulgarian was μ , that is to say a m superimposed on a τ , and in that language it had the value of sht, which it still retains in Modern Bulgarian.

§ 35.
$$\Theta = f$$

is the Greek θ and is called in Russian entá (pron. fitá). It is only used in words and names of Greek origin, e.g. θ omá = Thomas, pron. Famá; θ eogóci θ = Theodosia (a town in the Crimea, pron. Feodósia).

The Greek ξ is represented in Russian by KC, e. g. Amercáhapt = Alexander, akcióma = axiom.

PHONETIC TRANSCRIPTION

§ 36. In the foregoing, §§ 4-35, the ordinary English letters only have been used to render the pronunciation of the Russian vowels and consonants. This has been done for the sake of general utility, but it must be understood that such a method of transcription is not only unscientific but also only approximately accurate. Appended is a list of the Russian sounds already enumerated and described together with their approximate equivalents in the signs currently used for phonetic spelling in England for the benefit of those students who are acquainted with the latter; needless to say that in a work of this size neither the list of Russian sounds nor that of their equivalents can pretend to include all the variations of pronunciation which occur, variations which are largely conditioned by the varying rates of spoken speech.

Russian letter.	Phonetic transcription.
a ·	followed by hard vowel or final
"	followed by a palatal a vowel or by b

```
Russian
                                  Phonetic
letter.
                               transcription.
      (when pronounced like the)
      obscure vowel in English
        followed by a hard vowel
   9
       followed by a palatal vowel
                                       ĭ
   ы
   0
             when accented
                                       ວ
            when unaccented
                                       θ
   ,,
   y
                                       u
                                   ja or ja
   Я
   e (ቴ)
                                   j€ or je
   H
                                    i or ji
   ö
                            jo (after ж, ч, ш, щ = o)
                                      ju
   ю
   ь
   б
                                      b
   В
                                       v
   r
                                       ď
   Д
                                       3
   ж
   3
                                       z
                                      k
   к
                                       1
   A
                                      \mathbf{m}
                                      n
   Ħ
   Π
                                      p
   p
   c
   T
                                      f
   ф
                                      x
   x
                                      ts
   Ц
   ч
   Ш
                               ]'t']' or jtj' or j'
   Щ
   θ
```

THE ACCENT

§ 37. As has already been remarked, the accent in Russian is mobile, i.e. it may fall on any syllable. There are certain rules which govern it in certain cases, but their value is discounted by the existence of numerous exceptions. Correct accentuation is one of the greatest difficulties that Russian presents to the foreigner, as a misplaced accent may lead to disconcerting errors; at the best a foreigner who puts the accent on the wrong syllable will merely not be understood at all. The difficulty is increased by the fact that neither in writing nor in print is the accent marked, and in addition by the fact that in many cases words, though spelt identically, have quite different meanings according to where the accent is placed, e. g. мука = flour, but мука = torment; плачу́ = I pay, but плачу = I weep; воды = waters (nom.pl.), but воды́ = some water (gen. sing.), and many others.

Although the Russians talk much more musically than the English, the Russian accent is not a musical, but a stress accent. The accented syllable is always very strongly emphasized (in contrast to French), and the unaccented syllables consequently lose in some cases the full value of their vowels, e.g. unaccented o is always pronounced a (like our u in but), e. g. gopóra = road, pron. daróga: unaccented π like i or e. e. g. πητωμετάτω = fifty (lit. cinq dizaines), pron. pidyesyát. It should be mentioned that in a number of cases the same word is often accented differently by different but equally well educated Russians, e.g. тёмно and темно = dark (adv.), иначе and иначе = otherwise, ворота and ворота = gateway, and also that the accent is often withdrawn altogether from the noun by a preposition governing it, e.g. sá pyky = by the hand (pyky = acc. sing. of pyká = hand), ná rojoby = on the head (вс. on to; róлову = acc. sing. of голова́ = head, во-время = in good time (the hyphen is used to distinguish it from BO BPÉMS + gen. = during ...), and sometimes from the past tense of a verb by the negative particle, e. g. Hé быль, Hé было = was not, Hé harb = did not give, though such cases both as regards nouns and verbs are the exception rather than the rule.

Failing the help viva vocs of a competent teacher, beginners are recommended to read only accented texts, of which many have been published, in order to get used to the accent and also to read poetry, where the position of the accent is always indicated by the metre.

A list of accented texts published is given in the bibliography at the beginning of this book. By observing carefully the accents on the most commonly used cases and parts of the most commonly used nouns, verbs, &c., the student will learn where to place the accent far more quickly than by learning rules and exceptions which always contain forms that are rarely used. The accent is invariably marked in all dictionaries, even in those Russian dictionaries printed in Russia for the exclusive use of Russians, but in Russian grammars printed in Russia it is usually omitted.

THE DECLENSION OF THE SUBSTANTIVES

§ 38. There are three genders in Russian—Masculine, Feminine, and Neuter; and two numbers—Singular and Plural, though traces of the Dual are numerous in the declensions.

There is no definite or indefinite article in Russian corresponding to our the, a, an. The context is usually sufficient to indicate which is meant, whether the or a; otherwise recourse must be had to the demonstrative or indefinite pronouns. The demonstrative pronoun is sometimes used as a definite article after the noun which it qualifies, though only in the colloquial language (cf. § 48).

There are six cases in Russian, viz. Nominative, Genitive, Dative, Accusative, Instrumental, and Locative. This last is sometimes called the Prepositional, because it is never used except after one of the five prepositions: o = concerning, BD = in, Ha = on, HPH = in the presence of, HO = after. The Instrumental can be used without a preposition, when it denotes the instrument or agent by means of which anything is done. It is also used after certain prepositions, and then loses the meaning which the name implies. For the remains of the Vocative in modern Russian of. § 39, Obs. 9.

§ 39. Masculine Nouns having the Nom. Sing. in -ъ, -ь, -й.

Almost all masculines end in -ь, -ь, or -й. All nouns which end in -ь and -й are masculine.

All nouns which end in 5 are called hard, those ending in 5 or -n soft; those case-endings of a hard noun which begin with a hard vowel, begin with a soft vowel if the noun is soft, otherwise they are similar for both hard and soft nouns.

A peculiarity of the masculine nouns is that in the case of animate things the acc. sing. is the same as the gen. sing., while in the case of inanimate things it is the same as the nom. sing.; this rule applies also to the plural.

Examples: (bard) столь = table; народь = people, nation; (soft) царь = tsar'; олень = deer; сарай = coach-house.

Singular.

N.	столь	наро́дъ	царь	оле́нь
G.	стола	наро́да	царя́	оле́ня
D.	столу́	наро́ду	царю́	оле́ ню
A.	столь	народъ	царя́	оле́ня
I.	столомъ	народомъ	царёмъ	оле́немъ
L.	столъ́	наро́дѣ	царѣ	оле́нъ̀

Plural.

столы	наро́ды	цари	инэко
столо́въ	народовъ	царей	оле́ней
столамъ	народамъ	царя́мъ	оле́нямъ
столы́	наро́ды	царе́й	оле́ней
стола́ми	народами	царя́ми	оленямъ
столахъ	народахъ	царя́хъ	ďxrhèno
	столо́въ стола́мъ столы́ стола́ми	столо́вть наро́довъ стола́мъ наро́дамъ столы́ наро́ды стола́ми наро́дами	столо́вть наро́довть царе́й стола́мть наро́дамть царя́мть столы́ наро́ды царе́й стола́ми наро́дами царя́ми

Singular.		Plural.
N.	capáñ	сара́и
G.	сарая	сара́евъ
D.	capáio	сара́ямъ
A.	capáii	сара́и
I.	сара́емъ	сара́ями
L.	capáh	сараяхъ

OBSERVATIONS.

- 1. The acc. sing and plur of all masculine nouns is the same as the nom. sing and plur in the case of inanimate, and the same as the gen sing and plur in the case of animate things: thus the acc. sing of crown is crown, but of царь—царя.
- 2. The mass nouns in -1 have borrowed the ending of the gen. plur. -en (e. g. uapén) from another declension.
- 4. The inst. sing. and gen. plur. of all masc. nouns in -жъ, -чъ, -чъ, -чъ, -чъ, -чъ, -чъ, ниъ, епd respectively in -емъ (-öмъ if accented) and -ей, е. g. това́рищъ, = companion, inst. sing. това́рищемъ, gen. pl. това́рищей; ножъ = knife, inst. sing. ножёмъ (pron. nazhóm), gen. pl. ноже́й; ключъ = key, inst. sing. ключёмъ, gen. pl. ключе́й; экипа́жъ = carriage, inst. sing. экипа́жемъ, gen. pl. экипа́жей. All these nouns were originally soft and have only latterly become hard. In the same way the nouns ending in -цъ were originally soft; of these, those which have the last syllable accented have become hard throughout, e.g. оте́цъ = father, makes inst. sing. отно́мъ and gen. plur. отно́въ, but those which are not accented on the last syllable still make their inst. sing. in -емъ, and their gen. plur in -евъ, e. g. мъ́сяцъ = moon or month, inst. sing. мъ́сяцемъ and gen. plur. мъ́сяцемъ
- 5. A large number of words which contain c or o in the last syllable of the nom. sing. lose this vowel in the oblique cases when, while on the e or o in the nom., the accent afterwards passes to the case-ending, and sometimes also when the accent throughout is on the first syllable; the emphasis on the accented syllable is so strong that the weak vowel of the unaccented syllable disappears, e.g. oréits = father, gen. sing. orig, dat. sing. orig, nom pl. origi; за́мокъ = castle, за́мка; дворе́цъ = palace, gen. sing. дворій; песо́къ = sand, песка; кусо́къ = piece, куска; день = day, gen. sing. дня. In those words containing ле-, i.e. soft л, e becomes ь to show that the л remains soft, e.g. лёдь = ice, gen. sing. льда, but лобь = forehead, gen. sing. лба, with hard л. The e is retained in cases where

its omission mould cause an excessive accumulation of consonants, e. g. мертичь — corpse makes gen. sing. мертична. A few words in -óй make gen. sing. in -ьи, dat. in -ью, nom. pl. -ьи, &c.; e. g. ручей — stream, gen. sing. ручьй, also воробей — sparrow, муравей — ant, and соловей — nightingale, nom. pl. соловьй, &c.

Words in -öme make their gen. sing. in -öma, dat. sing, -ömy, &c.; e.g. заöme = loan, gen. заömä; 60 cma = fighter, gen. бойна, and заянь = hare, by analogy, makes зайна.

In other cases where the same process apparently occurs the e and o have merely been inserted in the nom. sing. to make pronunciation easier, e. g. εύτερε = wind, gen. sing. εύτρα; οτόμε = fire, οτιά; ýτοπε = corner, γιπά, ýτοπε = coal, ýτιπ.

- 6. Masculine nouns denoting divisible matter have a gen. sing. in -y (-ю) when the gen. is used in a partitive sense, e. g. фунть чаю = a pound of tea, from чай = tea; мало народу = few people (lit. little of people), but мибніе народа = the opinion of the people, though this gen. has become usual in a number of cases where there is no idea of partition, e. g. съ виду = by sight, безъ толку = without sense, съ низу = from below, съ верху = from above, отъ роду = from one's birth, изъ дому = out of the house (or home).
- 7. Several nouns have a loc. sing. in -ý, always accented, which is used after the prepositions between and ha = on, e.g. be capý = in the garden, ha moctý = on the bridge, between the year..., between the forest, ha before on the bank (or shore), ha myrý = in the meadow, ha kpań = on the edge (from kpaň), be yeaý = in the corner (nom. yeofe), ha holý = on the floor, and others. Cf. § 68.
- N.B. After the prepositions o(obs) = about and npm = near the loc. in -b is used.
- 8. Several nouns have a nom. pl. in -á, -á, which is always accented. This is really the old nom. dual, but its use has extended from the dual to the plural; e.g. глазь = eye, nom. pl. глаза; берегь = bank, nom. pl. берега = the two banks of a river, but also = the shores of the ocean; porь = horn, nom. pl. porа; бокь = side, nom. pl. бока; also вечерь = evening has nom. pl. вечера; домь = house, дома; голось = voice, голоса; колоколь = bell, колокола; городь = town makes города; докторь = doctor, доктора; профессорь = professor, профессора; учитель = teacher, учителы; въкь = age, century, годь = year, and край = country have both ваки and въка, годы and года, краи and край. A few have two forms of the

nom, pl. with different meanings: Borock = hair, has Borocá = hairs. and Bosoch = hair (coll.), a head of hair; obpast = form, species, manner, has образа = holy images, and образы = forms; хльбь = bread, has клюба = the crops, and клюбы = loaves; прыть = colour. has netrá = colours and netrá = flowers (for the sing, the diminutive form upbroks is used, in the sense of a single flower or blossom); мъхъ = (1) bellows, has nom. pl. мъхи, = (2) fur, has мъха = furs. Several masculine nouns have a nom. pl. in -ba, which is really a feminine collective sing. in form, though used as a masculine nom. pl. Thus брать = brother makes nom. pl. братья; стуль = chair, nom. pl. стулья; листь = leaf or sheet of paper makes листья = leaves, leafage (but regularly листы = sheets of paper); другь = friend, nom. pl. друзья: мужь = husband, мужья: зять = brotherin-law or son-in-law, зятьй; князь = prince, князьй. The last four make their gen. pl. in -cñ, like царь, e.g. друзей, while братья makes gen. pl. братьевъ, стуль-стульевъ, as do some other less common nom, plurals in -isi; all, however, from the dat. pl. onwards go alike, e.g. друзыять, inst. pl. друзыян, loc. pl. друзьяхъ.

Сынъ = son has nom. pl. сыновы́; gen. pl. сынове́й, dat. pl. сыновы́ясь, &c. Coch̄дь = neighbour and чёрть = deril make their plural like царь throughout, nom. pl. сосы́ди, gen. pl. сосы́дей, &c.

A number of masculine nouns in -инъ, denoting individuals, make nom. pl. in -e and in the gen. pl. have no ending: граждани́нт = cibizen makes nom. pl. гражда́не, gen. pl. гражда́нъ, from the dat. pl. onwards being regular, viz. гражда́намъ, &c.; англича́ниъ = Englishman, nom. pl. англича́не, gen. pl. англича́нъ. Thus also тата́ринъ = Tartar, nom. pl. тата́ре; болга́ринъ = Bulgarian, болга́ре; датча́нинъ = Dane, датча́не (also accented датчанинъ, датчане); москвити́нинъ = citizen of Moscow, москвити́не; ри́млинить = Roman, ри́млине; слава́нинъ = Slav, слава́не; дворяни́нть = nobleman, двора́не; крестья́нинъ = peasant, крестья́не, and (not to be confused with the last, though of identical derivation) христіа́нинъ = Christian, nom. pl. христіа́не.

Господинъ = Mr., makes nom. pl. господи = Messieurs, 'Gentlemen!' (also 'Ladies and Gentlemen!'), gen. pl. господъ, dat. pl. господанъ, &c. Хозиннъ = host, householder, makes nom. pl. хозивва = (1) hosts and (2) host and hostess, gen. pl. хозиенъ, dat. pl. хозиеванъ, &c. Several regular masculine nom. plurals make

their gen. pl. without any ending, as the above; this is really the old gen. pl. of this declension, while the form termed 'regular' in -овь, -овь was borrowed from another declension. Thus волосы = hair (collective) makes gen. pl. волось; разь = time, stroke, once, gen. pl. разь; солдать = soldier, gen. pl. солдать; глазь = eye, gen. pl. глазь; футь = foot (measure), gen. pl. футь; футь = pound (measure), gen. pl. футь; аршинь = yard (measure), gen. pl. аршинь, and most names of kinds of soldiers, e. g. gén. pl. гренадерь, драгунь, &c.

The gen. pl. of человъть = human being, the only case of the plural of this word which is used, is человъть, and it is only used after numerals, e.g. сто человъть = a hundred people.

9. Богь = God has a voc. sing. Боже, otherwise it is declined regularly, like столь, viz. Бога, &c. Господь = Lord, has a voc. sing. Господи, and though soft in the nom., is from the gen. sing. onwards declined like столь, viz. Господа, &c. Христось = Christ, is from the gen. sing. onwards declined like столь, viz. Христа, &c. The old voc. of отещь = father occurs in the phrase Отче нашь = Pater noster.

§ 40. Feminine Nouns having the nom. sing. in -a, -s.

Almost all nouns ending in -a, -n are feminine. All those which end in -a are called hard, those ending in -n soft; those case-endings of a hard noun which begin with a hard vowel begin with a soft vowel if the noun is soft, otherwise they are similar for both hard and soft nouns.

As regards the accusative case, the acc. sing. of all nouns in -a, -n is quite different from the nom. sing., whether the thing be animate or inanimate. The acc. pl. of feminine nouns in -a, -n is the same as the nom. pl. in the case of inanimate, the same as the gen. pl. in the case of animate things. This is no doubt due to the influence of the masculine declension.

Examples: (hard) же́нщина = woman, сестра́ = sister. (soft) земля́ = land, а́рмія = army.

		Sing	jular.	
N.	же́нщина	сестра	ект ы	а́рмія
G.	же́нщины	сестры	земли́	áрмін
D.	женщинъ	сестрѣ	землѣ́	а́рмін
A.	же́нщину	cecrpý	окмэ́с	áрмію
I.	женщиной	cecrpón	землёй	а́рміей
L.	же́нщинѣ	сестрѣ	землѣ́	а́рміи
	1718	•	D	-

Plural.

N.	же́нщины	сёстры	зе́мли	а́рміи
G.	же́нщинъ	сестёръ	земе́ль	а́рмій
D.	женщинамъ	сестрамъ	зомдімъ	а́рміямъ
A.	же́нщинъ	сестёръ	зе́мли	а́рміи
I.	же́нщинами	сестрами	земля́ми	а́рмія ми
L.	женщинахъ	сестрахъ	землихъ	а́рміяхъ

OBSERVATIONS.

- 1. The inst. sing. of fem. nouns in -a, -s has two forms, the short -oň, -eň and the long -oю, -eю. The latter is the older and is still often used in poetry when an additional syllable is required, but in the colloquial language the shorter form is almost always used.
- 2. The gen. pl. of all fem. nouns ending in a vowel+ π , which case would end in b if the last letter of the stem were a consonant, is always written with an $\ddot{\pi}$ and is a diphthong, e. g. m = neck makes gen. pl. m = army makes ápmiñ.

The gen. pl. of fem. nouns ending in -ыі ends in -еії; e. g. статьі = newspaper article, gen. pl. статей. Дідн = uncle also has gen. pl. дідей, and судьі = judge, gen. pl. судей (судьі із otherwise declined just like землі, viz. gen. sing. судьі, nom. pl. судьи, &c.).

3. The dat. and loc. sing. of fem. nouns ending in -is ends in -iu, e.g. áрмія = army, dat. and loc. sing. áрмін; редитія = religion, редитія; Россія = Russia, Россіи; Антлія = England, Антліи.

Many fem. Christian names are spelt in two ways in the nom. sing., either -iя or -ья; if spelt in the former way, the dat. and loc. sing. ends in -iя; if in the latter, then in -ьѣ: e.g. Софія = Sophia, dat. and loc. sing. Софія, but Софья, dat. and loc. sing. Софьѣ; the former spelling is preferable.

- 4. The gen. sing. and nom. acc. pl. of all fem. nouns in -ка, -га, -ха, -ча, -ща, -жа, -ша end in -ки, -ги, -хи, -чи, -ши, -жи, -ши because ы cannot stand after a guttural or after ч, щ, ж, от ш.
- 5. The inst. sing. of all fem. nouns ending in -ца, -ца, -ща, -жа, -ша ends in -ой (sometimes written -ёй) if the accent falls on the ending, and in -ей if the accent falls on the root, e.g. Царица = Tearitea has inst. sing. царицей, but душа = soul has inst. sing. душой.

- 6. A number of words whose stems end in two consonants insert a vowel between these two consonants in the gen. pl. in order to facilitate their pronunciation; e.g. сестра́ = sister has gen. pl. сестръ́; ко́шка = cat—ко́шекъ; земля́ = land—земе́лъ; дере́вня = village—дереве́нъ; ба́рышня = young lady—ба́рышень. A few such soft nouns become hard in the gen. pl., e.g. пѣ́сня = song, gen. pl. пѣ́сенъ; ба́сня = fable—ба́сенъ; ба́шня = tower—ба́шенъ. Nouns with ь in the stem lengthen this to e in the gen. pl., e.g. судьба́ = fate, gen. pl. суде́бъ; those with й in the stem likewise, e.g. копе́йка = kopek (the coin), gen. pl. копе́екъ (also spelt копѣйка, копѣ́екъ).
- 7. It is to be noted that there are a few masculine nouns and a number of names (mostly diminutives) ending in -a and -я and declined like feminine nouns: слуга́ = male servant, 1 ю́ноша = youth, ди́дя = uncle, судья́ = judge, убінца = murderer, пья́ница = drunkard.

Алёша = diminutive of Алексъ́й = Alexis; Ва́ня = dim. of Ива́нъ = John; Воло́дя = dim. of Влади́міръ = Vladimir; Ко́ля = dim. of Никола́й = Nicholas; Ми́ша = dim. of Миха́йлъ = Michael; Пе́тя = dim. of Пётръ = Peter; Са́ша = dim. of Алекса́ндръ = Alexander; Серёжа = dim. of Сергъ́й = Sergius, and many others; notice also the name Илі́ц = Elias.

§ 41. Neuter Nouns having the nom. sing. in -o, -e.

Almost all neuter nouns end in -o or -e. All nouns which end in -o or -e are neuter.

All nouns which end in -o are called hard, those ending in -e soft.

Examples: (hard) село́ = village.

(soft) \begin{cases} \text{mode} &= sea. \\ \text{mode} &= property (sc. land). \end{cases}

		Singular.	
N.	село́	мо́ре	um É Hio
G.	села́	мо́ря	нижнія
D.	селу́	мо́рю	имѣнію
A.	село́	мо́ре	имѣніе
I.	село́мъ	мо́ремъ	имѣніемъ
L.	селъ	мо́рѣ	нивніи

¹ N.B. npuczyra = a male or female servant is feminine.

Plural.

N.	сёла	моря́	имѣнія
G.	сёль	море́й	йіндми
D.	сёламъ	морямъ	амкінітин
A.	сёла	моря́	имѣ́нія
I.	сёлами	моря́ми	имѣніями
L.	сёлахъ	моряхъ	ахкін ў мн

OBSERVATIONS.

1. The neuter nouns in -e have borrowed the ending of the gen. pl. -en (e.g. море́й) from another declension.

Nouns in -ье as a rule make their gen. pl. in -ей, е. g. ружьё = gun, gen. pl. ружей, but платье = dress or suit, makes платьевь, and күшанье = dish (sc. the food)—күшаньевь.

Abstract nouns in -ie can also be spelt-ье, e. g. жела́ніе от жела́нье = wish; in the former case they are declined like имѣніе and in the latter like мо́ре.

- 2. Neuter nouns in -че, -ще, -же, -ще, -це follow the hard declension, but make their inst. sing. in -емъ, е. g. училище = school, inst. sing. училищемъ, but gen. sing. училища, gen. pl. училищъ.
- 3. A number of hard neuter nouns whose stems end in two consonants insert a vowel between these two consonants in the gen. pl. in order to facilitate their pronunciation, e.g. окно = window, gen. pl. оконъ; письмо = letter—писемъ.

Яйцо́ = egg makes gen. pl. я́иць, = two syllables, while the nom. pl. is я́йца.

4. A number of neuter nouns have unexpected forms in the pl., thus аблоко = apple, nom. pl. аблоки, gen. pl. аблокь; плечо = shoulder, nom. pl. плечи, gen. pl. плечь; колбно = knee, nom. pl. колбни, gen. pl. колбни, уто = ear makes упи, утой, око = eye (роеtіс)—очи, очей; in the dat., inst., and loc. pl. these all follow село, e.g. inst. pl. аблоками, ушами, плечами (the endings in -и are relics of the old neuter dual, the eyes, ears, and shoulders being naturally mentioned in the dual oftener than in the plural). Небо = heaven makes nom. pl. небеса, gen. pl. небесь; чудо = miracle—чудеса, чудесь, dat. pl. небесамъ, чудесамъ, &c.

Де́рево = tree makes nom. pl. дере́вья, gen. pl. дере́вьевъ, dat. pl. дере́вьямъ, &c.; перо́ = feather, pen — перья, — перьевъ, &c.; крыло́

= wing—кры́лья, &c. There is a whole category of words which are neuter in the pl. and masculine in the sing.; these are all names of young living things, e.g. ребита = children, (gen. pl. ребить), ребиокь = child; щенита = puppies, sing. щенокь; цыплата = young fowls, sing. цыплёнокь; жеребита = foals, sing. жеребёнокь; телита = calves, sing. телёнокь; поросата = sucking-pigs, sing. поросёнокь; котата = kittens, sing. котёнокь; all these words in the sing. come under obs. 5, § 39, i.e. gen. acc. sing. ребёнка, &c.¹

§ 42. Feminine Nouns having the nom. sing. in -b.

A number of fem. nouns, especially abstract nouns derived from adjectives, such as parter joy, from parter glad, end in -5 in the nom. and acc. sing. and form a distinct class, sometimes called the *i*-declension.

Example: ло́шадь = horse.

	Singular.	Plural.
N.	ло́шадь	ло́шади
G.	ло́шади	лошадей
D.	ло́шади	лошадя́мъ
A.	ло́шадь	лошадей
I.	ло́шадью	лошадьми
L.	ло́шали	лошаля́хть

OBSERVATIONS.

- 1. The acc. pl. of names of animate things is the same as the gen. pl.; e.g. nom. pl. лошади = horses, gen. and acc. pl. лошадей; nom. pl. люди = people, men and women (which is used as the plural of человъкь, cf. p. 49; the singular of люди із людь, a hard masculine noun, and means a people), gen. and acc. pl. людей, but кость = bone, gen. pl. костей, acc. pl. кости. The gen. pl. -ей of this declension is that borrowed by soft masc. and neuter nouns, cf. pp. 46, 52.
- 2. The regular inst. pl. of this declension, -ьми, has become replaced by that in -ими, borrowed from the soft fem. declension, in all words except the following: лошадь = horse, inst. pl. лошадьми, люди = people—людьми; кость = bone—костьми; дверь = door—дверьми; дти = children—дтьми; but радость = joy—радостими; скорость = speed—скоростими; страсть = passion—страстими; сани (pl. only) = sledge—саними; часть = part—частими.

¹ Облако = cloud has gen. pl. облаковъ.

- 3. Those nouns which end in -чь, -щь, -жь, and -шь, and це́рковь = church (cf. the following paragraph) have the dat. pl. in -амъ, the inst. pl. in -амъ, and the loc. pl. in -ахъ; е. g. ночь = night—ноча́мъ, ноча́мъ, ноча́мъ, веща́мъ, веща́мъ, веща́мъ, веща́мъ, церква́мъ, церква́мъ, церква́мъ.
- 4. The five nouns це́рковь = church, любо́вь = love, рожь = rye, ложь = lie, and вошь = louse lose the o in all the oblique cases except in the inst. sing. Thus, gen. sing. це́ркви, любо́вь, ржи, &c., but inst. sing. це́рковью, любо́вью. When, however, Любо́вь is used as a Christian name, = Love, then it retains the o; gen. sing. Любо́вь, &c.
- 5. There is only one masc. noun in this declension: путь = way, (= road and means); it is declined exactly like ло́шадь except that the inst. sing. is путёмъ and the inst. pl. путями.
- 6. The noun сажень = seven feet (measure) has gen. dat. sing. сажени and gen. pl. сажень.
- 7. The two nouns math = mother, and gound = daughter are declined as follows:

Sıngular.		Plural.
N.	мать	ма́тери
G.	ма́тери	матере́й
D.	матери	матеря́мъ
A.	мать	матере́й
I.	ма́терью	матеря́ми
L.	ма́тери	матеря́хъ

The inst. pl. матерьми, дочерьми are also used. In the colloquial language the use of мать and дочь is often replaced by that of the diminutives матушка (от мамаша) and дочка, which follow the ordinary fem. declension.

8. It is important to remember that the very common plurals люди = people and дъти = children, are declined like the plural of лющадь.

§ 43. Neuter Nouns having the nom. sing. in -n.

A few neuter nouns end in -n in the nom. and acc. sing. and form a distinct class, sometimes called the n-declension.

Example: Bpéms = time.

	Singular.	Plural.
N.	вре́мя	времена
G.	вре́мени	времёнъ
D.	времени	временамъ
A.	вре́мя	времена
I.	временемъ	временами
L.	вре́мени	временахъ

Other common words in this declension are: имя = (Christian) name, племя = tribe, пламя = flame, бремя = burden, and chmя = seed (which has an irregular gen. pl. срамянь), знамя = standard, стремя = stirrup (gen. pl. стремянь).

The word $\mu_{\text{urf}} = child$, which is neuter, is declined in the singular as follows:

N. дитя

G. дитяти

D. литіти

А. дитя

I. дитятей

L. дитіти

The plural giru goes like лошади q. v.; in the colloquial language the alternative word for child, ребёнокъ (cf. p. 53), is more commonly used for the singular, child, and giru more commonly for the plural, children.

The oblique cases of дитя́ are very seldom used except in literature, and the plural of ребёнокь, ребята, is specially used in the meaning comrades, boys, e. g. among soldiers, though also commonly used for children by the peasants.

§ 44. Note on the Terminations of Substantives.

All nouns ending in -b, -it are masculine.

", ", ", -o, -e are neuter.

Nouns ,, ,, -b are either masculine or feminine, e.g. $\mu_{abb} = tsar^{b}$, masc., but ócehb = autumn, fem.

Most nouns ending in -a, -я are feminine, but a few are masculine and neuter, e.g. слуга́ = (man-)servant, судья́ = judge, masc., амя = (Christian) name, neut.

Common terminations denoting male and female agents are: masc. -икъ, -ель, -ецъ, -икъ, -унъ; fem. -ица, -иха, -ка, -унья, and others, e.g.:

Masculine.

прикащикъ salesman
ученикъ pupil
учитель teacher
пъвещь singer
самещь male (sc. beast)
купецъ merchant
генералъ general
господинъ Mr., gentleman
гражданинъ citizen
врунъ liar
государь sir, sovereign

баринъ sir. master

Feminine.

прика́щица
ученица
учи́тельница
пѣви́ца
са́мка female (вс. beast)
купчи́ха (his wife)
генера́льша (his wife)
госпожа́ Mrs., lady
гражда́нка (fem.)
вру́нья

вруны госуда́рыня lady, sovereign ба́риня lady, mistress

Notice that молоде́ць = clever chap, brave fellow (a very common word of praise), у́мница = clever-boots, другь = friend, and челов'якь = person, can be used of either males or females. The feminine of врачь = doctor is же́ницина врачь = woman doctor.

Сf. also англича́нка = Englishwoman (for masc. v. р. 48), нѣмець, нѣмка = German (pl. нѣмцы, fem. нѣмки). Similarly америка́нець = American, венге́рець = Hungarian, голла́ндець = Dutchman, непа́нець = Spaniard, италія́нець = Italian, норве́жець = Norwegian, швейца́рець = Swiss, ирла́ндець = Irishman, and шотла́ндець = Scot, all turn -ець into -ка for the fem. and -цы, -ки for the pl., gen. pl. = -цевь, -окь; португалець такез португа́лька, -льцы = Portuguese; австріець, австрійка, -ійцы = Austrian; бельгіець, -ійка, -ійцы = Belgian; шведь, шве́дка, шве́ды = Swede; грекь, греча́нка, гре́ки = Greek; сербь, сербія́нка, се́рбы = Servian; ту́рокь, турча́нка, ту́рки = Turk; полікь, по́лька, поліки = Pole; чехь, че́шка, че́хи = Bohemian, and францу́зь, францу́женка, францу́зы = French.

§ 45. Diminutive Endings.

The extensive use of diminutives is one of the first things that strikes the beginner. Some words are only used in their diminutive forms, e.g. мальчикь = boy, from which a further diminutive has had to be formed, viz. мальчинка = little boy. In many cases the diminutives are really meant to imply smallness, but very frequently they are used merely as a means of expressing affection, politeness, or good humour, and in such they are difficult, if not

impossible to translate in English. E. g. the conductor in a train always asks to see your биле́тики = little tickets; this does not imply that the tickets are small, but merely that the conductor would not refuse a drink.

The commonest diminutive endings are:

Masculine.

```
e. g. мáльчикъ = bou
-икъ.
           мальчинка = little bou
-ишка,
           внучекъ = arandson
-екъ.
           звърёкъ = animal
-ёкъ,
           пружо́къ = friend
-окъ.
           бра́тець = brother
-euъ
           котёнокъ = kitten (cf. § 41, obs. 4)
-ёнокъ.
           Петровичь = son of Peter 1
-HTL.
               Feminine.
           \piѣвочка = qirl (till puberty)
-ка.
                      = daughter of Peter 1
           Петровна
-na.
                      = part
           частина
-ua.
        ,,
                 Neuter.
           облачко
                      = cloud
-KO,
                      = letter
-цо,
           письмено
           око́ньие
                     = window
-ae.
```

As an example of the varieties of diminutives that can be formed from one word, take the word gibs = virgin (only used in such expressions as the 'Maid of Orleans', or crapan gibs = an old maid):

```
двища = spinster.
двища = girl (sc. common girl, wench, a very derogatory term).
двичка = girl (up to 12).
двичка = girl (from 12 till marriage, or till about 30).
двичка = little girl.
```

¹ Literally = Peter's little one; Петровъ (masc.) and Петрова (fem.) are possessive adjectives formed from the word Пётръ = Peter, and to the stem Петров are added -нчъ for the son and -на for the daughter. All other patronymics are formed analogously. Patronymics are often contracted in rapid conversation, e.g. Иаа́нычъ for Ива́новичъ, &c.; Ма́рія Ива́новна sounds like Марійнна.

The following terminations imply good humour or affection specifically:

-ушка, -юшка, -ышко, -енька, -енка.

The following terminations are considered to imply depreciation:

-ншка, -ншко, -ёнка, -онка and sometimes -ушка.

The following are called augmentatives, as they usually imply largeness:

-ина, -ище, -ища.

THE DECLENSION OF THE PRONOUNS

§ 46. The inflexions of these are for the most part different from those of the substantives, though there are a few points of similarity, e.g. the dat. pl. always ends in -mr and the inst. pl. always in -mr.

Personal Pronouns.

 $\mathbf{H}=\mathbf{I}$, ты = thou, онъ = he, она́ = she, оно́ = it, мы = we, вы = you, они́, онъ́ = they.

			Si	ngular.		
N.	. я		ты	онъ (neut. оно́) она́		
G.	меня́		тебя́	eró	ей	
D.	инъ		тебѣ	ему́	eň	
A.	меня́		тебя́	eró	eë	
I.	мной		тобой	имъ	ей	
L.	инъ		тебѣ	(н)ёмъ	(н)ей	
	•		1	Plural.		
	N.	мы		вы опи́ (та	sc. and neut.), ont (fem.	.)
	G.	насъ		васъ	ихъ	Ī
D. намъ А. насъ			вамъ	имъ		
		васъ		лхи		
	I. на́ми L. насъ			ва́ми	TEMP	
				васъ	(н)	

OBSERVATIONS.

1. There is a reflexive personal pronoun, ceon, which has no nominative, and is declined alike in the sing. and pl.:

G. себя́

D. себѣ

А. себя

I. собой

L ceft

i. e. just like тебя́.

The peculiarity of its use is that it can be applied to any of the three persons; e.g. π ποδπό ceδά = I lore myself, τη πόδημης ceδά = thou lovest thyself; οπό οτ οπά πόδημης ceδά = he or she loves himor herself. It also occurs in a few very common idioms; e.g. τακό ceδά = fairly, averagely (lit. = thus to itself); camó ceδό pazymétera = that is understood (lit. = itself understands itself by itself); ohá χοροιμά ceδό = she is a good-looking woman (lit. she [is] nice with herself); οπό κηθέτει ceδά ταπό... = he goes on living there (here the ceδά implies that he goes on living in his own way, paying little attention to others, but not necessarily that he is a recluse); онь сломать себѣ го́лову = he has cracked his head, the Russian equivalent for he has broken his neck.

When joined to an ordinary transitive verb (making it reflexive) себы is contracted to -сы от -сь; е. g. разумъется = of course (lit. = it understands itself), это не дъластся = that is not done; нахожусь = I find myself. But the addition of the reflexive pronoun by no means always makes the word passive; Russian has many reflexive verbs which are middle in meaning, е. g. боыться = to fear, боюсь = I fear; нравится = it pleases, мит правится = it pleases me, I like. Cf. §§ 100, 110.

- 2. The nominatives off, ohá, ohá, ohá, ohá did not belong originally to cró, &c., and are not really personal pronouns at all, but demonstrative pronouns, corresponding somewhat to the German jener, jene, jenes, which in Russian, no longer used regularly as demonstrative pronouns, have been borrowed to supply the place of the lost nominatives of ero, &c.
- 3. It is important to notice that the acc. sing. of онъ and of оно is always ero, i.e. = the gen. sing., even though the thing to which it refers be inanimate. Similarly the acc. pl. of они and of онъ is always ихъ.
 - 4. The initial u- in unb, uxb, and unu is always pronounced yi-.
- 5. The gen. sing. of one is usually pronounced yeyo, i. e. like the acc. sing. ee, though it is always written es.

- 6. The genitives of the personal pronoun eró, ex, and uxt ordinarily mean his, her, and their, since Russian has no possessive pronoun of the third person, e.g. the only way of saying his father in Russian is eró orént (or orént eró).
- 7. The oblique cases of ohe, ohá, and ohú, when directly governed by a preposition, are always prefixed by the letter H; this is ostensibly done for the sake of euphony, but the real reason is that certain prepositions originally ended in H, and this letter was borrowed by other prepositions which did not end in it. Subsequently when the prepositions lost their final H, it stuck to the pronoun where it has remained. As the loc. case in Russian is never used without a preposition of some sort, the loc. of this pronoun is always prefixed by H, placed in brackets in the paradigm for this reason. When a preposition precedes ero, en, or have in their meaning of his, her, or their, and therefore does not directly govern the pronoun, the H is omitted.

Examples: CL HUML = with him, OTL HUXL = from them, O HEML = about him, but otl eró othá = from his father, O eró spáth = about his brother. &c.

- 8. For the inst. sing. MHOÑ, TOGOÑ, eÑ, and coGoÑ the full forms MHOÑO, TOGOÑO, éÑO, and coGOÑO are often used.
- 9. In correspondence all cases of the pronoun вы are always spelt with an initial capital for politeness.
- 10. The particle же (or -жь) is often affixed to the personal pronouns, and expresses identity or gives emphasis to the pronoun; e.g. я твой, брать, я же и твой другь = I am thy brother, I too am thy friend; кто вамь даль это? онь—а это? онь же = who gave you this? he [did]—and this? he [did] too. In book catalogues when the name of the author has once been printed, егоже printed in front of the titles of his various works means by the same author.

же can also mean but where a slight emphasis is laid on the pronoun; e.g. вы же сказа́ли это! = but it was you [who] said this!

11. The particle to affixed to the personal pronouns also expresses identity or gives emphasis.

§ 47. Possessive Pronouns.

The declension of these resembles that of oht, mon, mon, mon; mon = my, mine; thon, thon, thon; thon = thy, thine; chon, chon, chon;

свой = one's own; нашъ, наша, наше; наши = our, ours; вашъ, ваша, ваше: ваши = your, yours.

	S	Plural.		
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	Masc., Fem., Neut.
N.	мой	моя́	моё	мои
G.	moeró	мое́й	moeró	мойхъ
D.	моему́	моей	моему́	моймъ
A.	mon or moerú	moió	моё	мой or mouxъ
I.	моймъ	мобй	моймъ	мойми
L.	моёмъ	мое́й	моёмъ	мойхъ
	s	ingular.		Plural.
N.	нашъ	наша	наше	на́ши
G.	нашего	на́шей	на́шего	на́шихъ
D.	нашему	нашей	нашему	нашимъ
A.	= N. or G.	на́шу	náme	= N. or G.
I.	напимъ	нашей	на́шпимъ	нашими
L.	нашемъ	на́шей	на́шемъ	на́шихъ

OBSERVATIONS.

- 1. Then and chen are declined exactly like men, and haurb exactly like haurb.
- 2. Crost can only be used when it refers to the subject of the sentence, but it can be used of any of the three persons; e.g. я πωσπώ ευσενό οτιμά can only mean I love my father (though it is also possible to say я πωσπώ μοενό οτιμά), whereas я πωσπώ ενό οτιμα = I love his father. Again, οπο πώσητο ενώ ευστρή = he loves his (own) sister, whereas οπο πώσητο ενώ ενετρή = he loves his (i.e. some one else's) sister.
- 3. The acc. sing. of the masc. and acc. pl. of all three genders of these pronouns follow the rule of the masculine substantives; i. e. when the object referred to is animate, the acc. = the gen., when inanimate it is the same as the nom.
- 4. For the inst. sing. моой, твоей, своей, нашей, and вашей, the full forms моею, твоею, своею, нашею, and вашею are also used.
- 5. It is important to notice that the nom. pl. мой (also твой and свой) is a disyllable, pronounced ma-yi; the nom. sing. masc. мой (as also твой and свой), on the other hand, is a diphthong, the -й being the original nom. sing. of the personal pronoun of the 3rd person, which in that declension has been replaced by онь, &c.

- 6. In correspondence all cases of the pronoun same are spelt with an initial capital for politeness.
- 7. The particle же (or -жъ) affixed to the possessive pronouns expresses identity of ownership, e. g. чей этоть домь? мой—а чьё это поле? моё же = whose is this house? mine—and whose is this field? mine also.
 - 8. The particle to emphasizes the pronouns; e.g.:

мой-то? = do you mean mine?

§ 48. Demonstrative Pronouns.

The declension of these is similar for the most part to that of the possessive pronouns, though differing from it in some important particulars.

тоть, та, то; Tb = that (yonder).

	Si	_	Plural.	
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	Masc., Fem., Neut.
N.	тотъ	та	то	тß
G.	τοτό	той	toró	тьхъ
D.	тому́	той	TOMÝ	тьмъ
A.	= N. or G.	ту	TO	= N. or G.
I.	твмъ	той	т виъ	тв́ми
L.	томъ	той	TOMT	тѣхъ

этоть, эта, это; эти = this or that (here).

	Si	Plural.		
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	Masc., Fem., Neut.
N.	этоть	э́та	э́т о	э́ти
G.	óror o	э́той	э́того	этихъ
D.	э́тому	э́той	э́тому	этимъ
A.	= N. or G.	э́ту	ότ ο	= N. or G.
I.	этимъ	э́той	этнмъ	э́тнми
L.	этомъ	źro й	э́томъ	этихъ

cell, ciá, cié (or cë); ciá=this (here).

		Plural.		
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	Masc., Fem., Neut.
N.	cett	сія́	cié	сій
G.	ceró	сей	ceró	сихъ
D.	сему	ceĦ	сему́	симъ
A.	= N. or G.	ciro	cié	= N. or G.
I.	симъ	сей	симъ	сими
L.	CÜNL	ceti	cëm e	сихъ

OBSERVATIONS.

- 1. For the inst. sing. той, этой, and cen the full forms тою, этою, and cen are also used.
- 2. Of these three pronouns from is the oftenest, cent the most seldom used. From is frequently used where we should say that in English, e.g. in very common phrases such as:

Что это тако́е? = what's that (lit. = what this such)? Кто это тако́й? = who's that (lit. = who this such)? Это было давно́ = that was long ago. Это о́чень корошо́ = that's very nice. Это нашъ помъ = that is our house.

Fro can also mean these or those when it is the subject of a sentence and very frequently has this meaning, e.g.:

это мой дътн = these or those [are] my children.

The neuter pronoun to is often used as an enclitic affixed to a noun or another pronoun irrespective of gender or number to emphasize or to differentiate, and it sometimes seems to take the place of the definite article.

E. g. вы томы-то и діло от то-то и есть (both =) that's just the point; домы-то мой = the house is mine.

(The first of these is not to be confused with the similar idiom given below.)

In the colloquial language, especially that of the peasants, this pronoun can be affixed to any noun (but only in the nom.) and made to agree with it, and thus acquire the value of a definite article.

- 3. Тоть is used specially frequently in argument, e. g. то, что... = that which...; it is also used as a definite article before a relative clause, e. g. тоть мальчикь, которому я даль деньги = the boy to whom I gave the money. In conversation, however, even that (yonder) is frequently rendered by этоть with the addition of тамь = there, e. g. этоть домь тамь—нашь = that house over there is ours.
- 4. Tota is especially common compounded with prepositions, e.g. notómb = then (lit. = upon that), sarbub = then (lit. = behind that), notomý = therefore (lit. = according to that), kpomb toró =

besides (lit. = outside that), 3a ro=on the other hand (lit. = for that).

- 5. Tors followed by erors is often used for the former and the latter.
- 6. It is important to notice the very common idiom то и д'яло (lit. = and that's the thing), which means incessantly.
- 7. Cen is seldom used except in a few phrases in which it is extremely common, e.g. cenuách = immediately (lit. = this instant, though the noun чась has changed its meaning and in modern Russian = hour); сію минуту = this minute, this instant; сего́дня = to-day (lit. = of this day); до сихъ поръ = till now (lit. = till these times); и то и сё = both the one and the other; при сёмь = 'enclosed' (lit. = in the presence of this).
- 8. The pronouns такой, этакой, and таковой = such are declined like adjectives, q.v.
- 9. The pronoun оный = that (yonder), which supplied the forms of the personal pronoun онь, &c., is now obsolete and only common in the phrase во время о́но = in days of yore (lit. = into that time).
- 10. Toth followed by the enclitic же = the same and is very common, e.g. вы томы же домы = in the same house, того же автора (gen.) = by the same author, сы тымы же мальчикомы = with the same boy; the words одины и = one and are often added, e.g. вы одномы и томы же городы = in one and the same town, вы одно и то жеврымя = at one and the same time. The phrase тоже, always written as one word, = also, e.g. мы тоже = we also. Этогы же = this same and такой же = of the same kind, are also very common.

§ 49. Relative and Interrogative Pronouns.

KTO = who (masc. and fem.); TTO = what.

N.	KTO	OTF
G.	ĸoró	чего́
D.	кому́	чему́
A.	кого	что
I.	квиъ	чвиъ
L.	комъ	чёмъ

чей, чья, чьё: чьи = whose.

Russian has a special pronoun for whose which is declined throughout.

	Si	ngular.	Plural.	
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	Masc., Fem., Neut.
N.	чей	RAP	чьö	иан
G.	чьего́	чьей	чьего́	ахиль
D.	чьому́	чьей	чьему́	амнан
A.	= N. or G.	оли	о _а р	= N. or G.
I.	чьимъ	чьей	чьимъ	имізан
L.	чь ёмъ	чьей	чьё м ъ	ахиаг

который = which, какой and каковой = of what sort, are declined like adjectives, q. v.; который supplies the plural of кто, что.

OBSERVATIONS.

- 1. The pronoun well is of course most frequently used in the nominative, e.g. чей этоть домь? = whose house is this? But the other cases are not uncommon, e. g. чью жену онъ любить? = whose wife does he love?
- 2. To is used to introduce a subordinate clause in all those cases where in English we use the demonstrative pronoun that. i.e. after all verbs of asserting, denying, believing, thinking, perceiving, feeling, &c., e. g. я говорю, что онъ дуракъ = I say that he [is] a fool. It is also used in the expressions for why and because, e.g. othoró?=why? (= from what), ottoró uto = because (lit. = from that what), hoven' ? = whu ? (lit, = according to what), hotom' 4TO = because (lit. = according to that what). It is important to notice the difference in meaning of these two expressions: •orveró = from what cause, e. g. отчего сегодня такъ темно? = why is it so dark to-day? отчего вы такь блёдны? = why are you so pale? but почему = on what ground, e.g. почему вы говорите это? = why do you say this? почему онъ желаеть видеть меня? = why does he wish to see me? Of course there are many questions in which either of the two words could be used indifferently, and the answer to both is usually introduced by noromy aro, which is far commoner than ortoro uto. There is yet another expression for why, viz. saybub? which means literally behind what? and thus comes to mean trying to get what? or with what object? e.g. зачыть вы пришли? = why

- (sc. with what object) have you come? The answer to such a question is introduced by заты́мь, чтобы (or more often merely by чтобы) = in order that (lit. behind that what), which is followed by the past tense or the infinitive; the particle -бы affixed to что (and sometimes written чтобь) is really part of the verb быть = to be, q. v. Чтобы means in order that, and is also used to introduce wishes, when it is always followed by the past tense, e.g. чтобы это было такь! = that it were so! Both что as a conjunction and чтобы are enclitics and have no accent.
- 3. Kto is often used by itself to express whoever, e. g. kto ymbets по-норвежски, тоть и понимаеть по-датеки = whoever knows Norwegian can also understand (lit. that one also understands) Danish, кто говорить это, врёть = whoever says this, lies, common way of expressing whoever and whatever is to add бы ни to кто and что, which are then always followed by the past tense: it is important to notice that the particle HH does not imply negation; e.g. кто бы мив ни говориль это, я ему не повърю = whoever should tell me this, I shall not believe him; что бы вы ни делали, я не буду васъ стушать = whatever you do, I shall not listen to you; and the following very common idioms may be mentioned: кто бы то ни было = whoever it be, что бы то ни было = whatever it be, and во что бы то ни стало = cost what it may (lit. = into whatever it should become). This use of бы must be carefully distinguished from that mentioned in the preceding paragraph. Whoever not can only be translated by кто не..., e.g. кто не видаль Москвы, не знаеть Россін = whoever has not seen Moscow, does not know Russia. Other common ways of expressing whoever and whatever are paraphrases such as every one who, all that, &c.
- 4. Kro..., кто... is very commonly used to express some... others..., e. g. всв убхали, кто на лошадихъ, кто по желбяной дорогв = they have all left, some by carriage (lit. = on horses), some by railway.
- 5. The particle же or -жь is very frequently affixed to кто, что, чей, and какой, and gives these pronouns the meaning who then? &c.; е. g. кого же вы видъли? = whom then was it you saw, whom then did you see? что же случилось? = what then has happened? Чтожь by itself, as an exclamation, is very commonly used in answer to a question or request, and means approximately certainly, or why not? Another very common idiom is ну, такъ что-жъ? =

well, what about it? Yet another что-жъ дилать? = what's to be done, que voulez vous?

OTHERO ME? and HOHEMY ME? are also very common in argument, meaning but why then? OTHERO ME! is also used as an exclamation, meaning both far from it, not at all, and certainly, by all means.

6. Что and что-жь is also very frequently used to introduce a question, and is in fact almost the most usual way of introducing an interrogative sentence; in this use it never has any emphasis on it; е.g. что вы побдете въ этомъ году заграницу? = shall you go abroad this year?

δ **50**.

Definitive Pronouns.

camъ, camá, camó; cámи = self.

	8	Singular.	•	Plural.
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	Masc., Fem., Neut.
N.	самъ	сама́	само́	сами
G.	camoró	самой	camoró	самихъ
D.	самому́	camóñ	самому́	самімъ
A.	= N. or G.	самоё	само	= N. or G.
I.	самимъ	само́й	сами́мъ	самими
L.	само́мъ	самой	само́мъ	самихъ

весь, вся, вс \ddot{e} ; вс $\ddot{b} = all$, the whole.

	S	Singular.		Plural.
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	Masc., Fem., Neut.
N.	Весь	вся	веё	всѣ
G.	Bceró	всей	B ceró	всѣхъ
D.	всему́	всей	всему́	всьмъ
A.	= N. or G.	всю	веё	= N. or G .
Í.	всвиъ	всей	всѣмъ	всѣми
L.	веёмъ	всей	всёмъ	всёхъ

OBSERVATIONS.

- 1. Всякій and каждый = every, each, иной = some, and другой = other, are declined like adjectives, q. v. For одинъ = only, alone (lit. = one) cf. Numerals, § 60.
- 2. One another is expressed in Russian by the phrase другь друга, which is the nom. and acc. sing. of the word другь, which originally meant second or other, but in modern Russian has acquired the meaning of friend; e.g. они очень любить другь друга = they love

one another very much, мы пошли другь сь другомъ = we went one with the other

- 3. Самъ can be used either before or after the noun it qualifies, e.g. я самъ = I myself (masc.), я сама́ = I myself (fem.), самъ царь = the tsar himself, я видъть самого цара́ = I saw the tsar himself, онъ мнъ самому́ сказа́ть это = he told this to me myself (вс. not through anybody else), мы сами = we ourselves, онъ самъ от самъ онъ = he himself, само́ собо́ю = hy or of itself, я самъ себъ́ купи́ть это = I bought this for myself myself, она́ сама́ себъ́ купи́та это = she bought this for herself herself.
- 4. It is not difficult to distinguish the use of camb from that of the reflexive pronoun ceóń, but camb is very easily confused with the longer form of the same word cámbit=the very, which is declined like an adjective, e.g. тоть же самый человъкь = the very same man, but самь человъкь = the man himself; вы самомы центры города = in the very centre of the town, but вы самомы городь = in the town itself. Самый is also used in the formation of the superlative degree in the comparison of adjectives, q. v.
- 5. The use of Bech does not present any difficulties, e.g. Bech городь = the whole town, весь день (acc.) = all day long, всю ночь (acc.) = all night long, она вся въ чёрномъ = she [is] all in black. It is very important to notice a few very common idioms in which the word occurs: conchub = quite (lit. = with all), всё равно = it's all the same (lit. = all even), Beero xopómaro, Beero nýumaro! = (I wish you) everything good, everything of the best! (gen. after verb of wishing), beeró = altogether, in all, e. g. beero пять мъсть багажа = five pieces of luggage in all (lit. = of all), Beë = continually (this is really an adverbial use of the neuter), e.g. она всё плакала = she kept on crying all the time, онь всё кричить = he keeps on shouting. he is always shouting, я всё иншу = I am always writing, онь всё ходить вы театурь = he is always going to the theatre. It is very important to be sure of pronouncing Beck with a soft c and closed e, as there is another word BECL having the open e-sound and hard ending, meaning weight.

§ 51. Indefinite Pronouns.

никто́ = no one, ничто́ = nothing.

These are declined exactly like kTO and TO, but it is to be observed that the nom. and acc. HHTO is very rarely used, the gen.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS

being almost always substituted for them, e.g. что сь нами? ничего́! = what is the matter with you? nothing! э́то ничего́! = no matter! (lit. = this [is] nothing). When a verb follows either of these pronouns, it must always be negative, since in Russian two negatives do not make an affirmative, but are on the other hand necessary to complete the negation, e.g. никто́ не пришёль = no one has come, я никому́ не сказа́ль = I have told no one; онь мнв ничего́ не́ даль = he has given me nothing.

The following very common idioms may be noticed: никого́ не видать = there is no one to be seen, ничего́ не видать = there is no one or nothing to be seen, никого́ от ничего́ не слыхать = there is no one or nothing to be heard.

There is a very idiomatic adverbial use of the word инчего in which it means tolerably, fairly well, e.g. какъ вы себя чувствуете? ничего! = how do you feel [yourself]? fairly well! This can also be used with a verb, e.g. онъ играетъ ничего = he plays fairly well, but of course with the double negative the meaning would be negative, e.g. онъ инчего не играетъ = he is not playing anything.

When никто and ничто are used with a preposition, the latter is inserted between the ни- and the pronoun, e. g. ни съ къмъ = with no one, ни о чомъ = about nothing, ни за что = not for anything, ни съ чъмъ = without accomplishing one's object (lit. = with nothing); ни въ чомъ не бывало is an idiom meaning not in the least, and какъ будто ни въ чомъ не бывало = quite unruffled, as if nothing had happened.

никакой = of no kind

is declined like an adjective, q.v.

не́кого = there is no one to . . . не́чего = there is nothing to . . .

Hé- can be prefixed to any case of кто and что except the nom., and the words thus formed are written as one word, except when used with a preposition, which, just as in the case of никто, is inserted between the He- and the pronoun. It is always followed by the inf. It is important to remember that the accent is always on the Hé-, while in никто it is always on the last syllable; e. g. нечего делать от делать нечего! = there is nothing to be done! (lit. = to do; a very common idiom), говорить нечего! = there is nothing more to be said, there's no denying it, некому сказать = there is no one

to tell, hé ch khad fobophth = there is no one to talk to (lit. = with), hé o чёмь инсать = there is nothing to write about, and the common idioms: hé sa что = il n'y pas de quoi (our don't mention it), hé sa чты = there is no object, there is no point.

нѣкто = some one, нѣчто = something.

It is important not to confuse these two words with hekoro and heffer. The beginner is all the more likely to confuse them because his pronounced exactly like e and in both the accent is on the same syllable. But as a matter of fact the two words are of very rare occurrence except in the nom., much the commoner expressions for some one and something being those mentioned lower; e.g. h chimath hefto o hem = I have heard something about him, ohd much hefto ckasárd = he told me something.

нъкоторый = a certain, some, is declined like an adjective, q. v.

кто-то = some one, что-то = something, кто-нибудь = some one or other, any one, что-нибудь = something or other, anything (lit. = who not be, who be it not), кто-либо = any one, что-либо = anything.

These are all declined exactly like kTo and uTo. The difference in meaning between кто-то and кто-нибудь is slight but very important. Κτό-το is the more definite of the two and can never mean any one; кто-нибудь is less definite and means some one or any one. The difference is best illustrated by examples: кто-то идёть = some one is coming, кто-то пришёль = some one has come, кто-то сказаль MHB = some one told me, któ-to tamb = [there is] some one there, któ-to позвонить = some one has rung, я даль кому-то книгу, но не помню кому = I gave the book to some one, but I don't remember to whom, она сказала мив что-то о нёмъ = she told me something about him (вс. but I don't want to tell you what), я вижу что-то тамъ = I see something there, онь написаль что-то на бумажкь = he wrote something on the piece of paper, рубль сь чыть то = a rouble with something (i.e. over a rouble. I forget how much), говидина съ чемъ-то = beef with something (i. e. something with it, I forget what), but none-nu któ-hugval? ог кто-нибудь дома? = is any one at home? спросите кого-нибудь! = ask some one! я спрощу у кого-нибудь совета = I shall ask advice from some one, я куплю важь что-нибудь = I shall buy you something or other (sc. I don't know myself exactly what), я куплю вамь что-то = I shall buy you something (sc. I know what, but I am not going to tell you), надо сдълать что-нибудь = something must be done (sc. 1 don't know what), надъньте что-нибудь теплъ = put something warm on (sc. it doesn't matter what), скушайте что-нибудь ещё = eat something more, скажите мнъ что-нибудь о себь = tell me something about yourself, сыграйте намъ что-нибудь! = do play us something!

Кто-либо and что-либо are still more indefinite, e. g. спросите кого-либо, а онъ скажеть вамъ... = ask any one you like, and he will tell you..., дайте кому-либо = give [it] to any one you like.

Kóñ-кто = a few, кое-что = a little. These are also declined exactly like кто and что; they imply indefiniteness of number or quantity, е. g. я спрашиваль кой-кого = I have been asking one or two people, онъ сказаль мий кое-что о себы = he told me a few things about himself, я узналь кое-что о . . . = I have found out a thing or two about . . . , я кой-съ къмъ говориль объ этомъ = I have been talking to one or two people about this.

Кой-какой = a few and любой = any you like are declined like adjectives, q.v.

DECLENSION OF THE ADJECTIVES

§ 52. The adjective in Russian has two forms, the shorter and the longer; the shorter is called the predicative, the longer the attributive.

The predicative form of the adjective is used almost solely when the adjective is the predicate of a sentence; in form it is exactly like a noun, and except in popular poetry it occurs only in the nominative, e. g. домъ хоро́шъ = the house [is] nice (cf. German: das Haus ist schön), мой сестра больна = my sister [is] ill, мо́ре глубоко́ = the sea [is] deep, они живы = they [are] alive, и о́чень радь = I [am] very glad, онъ счастливъ = he [is] happy, она здоро́ва = she [is] well, я виновать = I [am] to blame, я виновата = I [am] to blame (if a woman is speaking). But whenever an adjective qualifies a noun, the longer or attributive form must be used; this is an amalgamation of the shorter form with the pronominal endings. There is a hard and a soft declension, corresponding to the hard and soft nouns.

§ 53.

Hard Declension.

Example: бълый, бълая, бълое = white.

		Singular.		
	Masc.	Fem.		Neut.
N.	йыкад	бѣлая		бѣлое
G.	бѣлаго	йогад		білаго
D.	бѣлому	йолад		білому
A.	= N. or G.	бѣлую		бѣлое
I.	бѣлымъ	бѣлой		симпер
L.	бѣломъ	білой		беломъ
		Plural.		
	Masc.	Fem.		Neut.
N.	бѣлые		бѣлыя	
G.		бѣлыхъ		
D.	лемы деней д			
A.	= N. or G.			
I.	имысто			
T.		бұлыхъ		

Hard Declension when the ending is accented.

Example: молодой, молодая, молодое = young.

		Singular.	
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
N.	молодой	молодая	молодо́е
G.	молодо́го	молодой	молодо́го

after which it is declined exactly like of that, except that the accent is always on the ending, and on the first syllable of the ending when it is disyllabic.

OBSERVATIONS.

- 1. The rule with regard to the acc. sing. masc. and acc. pl. of the adjective is the same as that which governs the acc. sing. and pl. of masc. and the acc. pl. of fem. nouns, i. e. for an animate object it is always the same as the genitive and for an inanimate object the same as the nominative.
- 2. There is an alternative longer form of three syllables for every fem. inst. sing., e. g. 6t/1000 or 6t/100.

3. The nominative singular and plural of the attributive form of the adjective arose through the affixing of the lost pronominal nominatives (which are given in scientific works as js ja je, pronounced i ya ye, whose place in the pronominal declension has been taken by οπε οπά οπό) to nominatives of the predicative form, thus δέπω + π (js), δέπαπ = δέπα + π (ja), δέπασ = δέπα + σ (ja). Τhe form of the nom. sing. masc. is really of Old Bulgarian origin and has forced its way not only into Russian orthography but also into the living language, thanks to the influence of the Old Bulgarian ecclesiastical tradition in the Russian language; the real Russian form of the nom. sing. is -όπ, which is still retained in adjectives which are accented on the ending, e.g. μοποπόπ = young.

The other cases were formed analogously, though the process is clearer in some than in others, e.g. 6fmaro = 6fma + ero, 6fmyo = 6fmy + in (= ju yu, an old acc. of the pronominal declension), 6fmomy = 6fmy + emy; in the other cases more drastic contraction has occurred.

- 4. Several very common adjectives (including names) are accented on the ending and declined like молодой, e.g. передовой = foremost, золотой = golden, больной = ill, сёдой = gray-haired, большой = big, Толстой = Tolstói (while the adjective толстый = thick, fat, is declined like бёлый). It may be mentioned that almost all Russian surnames are adjectives and must be declined adjectivally, e.g. сочиненія Толсто́го = the works of Tolstói, я зналь Толсто́го = I knew Tolstói, я знаю графиню Толсту́ю = I know Countess Tolstói, Толсты́е = the Tolstóis, у Толсты́хъ = at the house of the Tolstóis. Also the ordinals: второй = second, шестой = sixth, седьмой = seventh, восьмой = eighth, and сороковой = fortieth.
- 5. Many adjectives ending in both -ый and -ой are used substantivally, e.g. столовая (sc. комната) = dining-room, гостиная = drawing-room, кладовая = store-room, насъкомое = insect, животное = animal, портной = tailor, городовой = policeman, рядовой = private, ломовой = carter, больной = the patient, the invalid (fem. больная), чужой = stranger, мясное = the meat-course, joint, борзой = a wolf-hound (lit. = swift), золотой = a gold coin (ten roubles), and very commonly the names of streets, e.g. Невскій (sc. проспекть) = the Nevsky (in Petrograd), Морская (sc. ўлица) = the Morskáya (street in Petrograd).

6. The m of the case endings of those adjectives whose stems both end in k. r. and x. and are accented, becomes H. e. g. kphikil = strong, kphikhub, kphikie, &c. (with fem. kphikas and neut. крвикое), маленькій = little, великій = great, широкій = broad, дикій = wild, стро́гій = severe, ти́хій = quiet, ўзкій = narrow, коро́ткій = short, cnánkiň = sweet, and many others; this category includes all adjectives derived from names of towns and countries, e.g. московскій = of Moscow, Muscovite, петроградскій = of Petrograd, кієвскій = of Kiev, ріскскій = of Riga, русскій = Russian, намецкій = German, французскій = French, англійскій = English, and innumerable surnames which are often derived from names of places, e. g. Оболенскій = Obolensky, Чайковскій = Tchaikovsky, Достоевckin = Dostoyevsky, &c. It must not be forgotten that all such surnames are declined throughout, e.g. the wife and unmarried daughter or sister of a man called Оболенскій із Оболенская, his whole family Оболенекіе, &c., and that for a foreigner to say, e.g. Madame Obolensky, is just as correct as it would be to talk about the Emperor Catherine.

But when an adjective whose stem ends in к, г, or x is accented on the ending then it is declined like молодой, and the ы only changes to и in the masc. and neut. inst. sing. and throughout the plural, e.g. городской = belonging to the town (nom. pl. городское), дорогой = dear (inst. sing. дорогой ы, nom. pl. дорогое, &c.), as also those surnames of this category which are accented on the ending, e.g. Трубецкой = Trubetskoi (nom. pl. Трубецкое = the Trubetskois), Шаховской = Shakhovskoi (fem. Шаховской), &c.

In this category are included those adjectives whose stems end in ж and ш, and are accented on the ending, e. g. the very common words чужой = strange (sc. not known), чужіє = strangers, у чужихъ = amongst strangers, въ чужомъ домъ = in another person's house, and большой = big, большой домъ = a large house, большой любитель искусства = a great lover of art, большо often = the grown-ups.

7. The pronouns which are declined like adjectives all belong to the hard declension: каждый = every, each, который = which, ибкоторый = a certain, some are declined exactly like былый, всякій = of every kind, every, each, like крынкій, and такой, этакой, таковой = of such a kind, такой-же = of the same kind, какой and каковой = of what kind, другой = other, никакой = of no kind, иной = some, кой-какой = a few, and любой = any you like, like дорогой and молодой.

These words are so very common that a few examples of their use are added: каждый лень (acc.) = erery day, на каждомъ шагу = at every step. каждую минуту (acc.) = every minute, каждый знасть = every one knows, который номерь? = which number? который чась? = what time is it? (lit. = which hour?), въ которомъ часу? = at what o'clock? которое число сегодия? = what date is it to-day? нъкоторые находять, что . . . = some consider (lit. = find) that . . . , нъкоторый Ивановъ = a certain [man called] Ivanov, до нъкоторой степени = to a certain extent, въ нъкоторомъ родъ = in a certain way, in some ways, вснкій вздоуь = all sorts of rubbish, вснкая книга = each book, всякія книги = all sorts of books, всякая всячина = odds and ends, онъ такой мілый! = he is such a nice man! (N.B. Russians never say такъ милый for so nice), она такая милая! = she is such a nice woman! они такіе милые! = they are such nice people! въ такую погоду = in (lit. into) such weather, въ такое время = at such a time, такимъ образомъ = in this way (lit. by such manner), which often comes to mean by doing this, to takon crémenn = to such an extent, такого рода = of such a sort (e.g. такого рода пьеса = a play of this sort; the nom, often follows the gen., but can also precede it), въ такомъ случав = in such a case, which comes to mean since this is so, въ такомъ родъ = in that manner, of that sort, такого-же рода, въ такомъ-же родь = of the same kind, in the same manner, какой онъ интересный! = how interesting he is! какая интересная книга! = what an interesting book! какой красивый мальчикь! = what a beautiful boy! какая хоро́шая пого́да! = what nice weather! какая плохая (скверная) погода! = what bad (nasty) weather! какинь образонь? = in what manner? какин новости сего́дня? = what news is there to-day? како́го ро́да? = of what sort? (e.g. это какого рода пьеса? = what sort of a play is this?), въ какомъ родъ = what like? какой вздоръ! = what rubbish! книга. каковую вы написали = a book of the sort which you have written, другой разь = another time, другого рода = of another sort, на другой день = the next day, другимъ образомъ = in another way, другие говорять = others say, никакимь образомь = in no way, ни въ какомъ случав = in no case, in no eventuality, which comes to mean whatever happens, ни за каків коврышки = not for anything in the world (lit. not for any sort of little carpets), вы которомы городы вы живете? ни въ какомъ = in which town do you live? not in any, кой-какія новостн = some items of news, иной разъ = sometimes (Germ. manchmal), иные говорить = some say (originally иной meant one, e.g. инорогь = unicorn, but it also acquired the meaning other, e.g. инородцы = people of other race than one's own), кой-какія книги = a few books of sorts, въ любой чась = at any hour (lit. into), въ любойъ городъ = in any town you like to mention, въ любой день any day you like (lit. into).

There is a very idiomatic use of Kakobóň as an interjection, usually expressing admiration at somebody's exploit, and it is always used in the predicative form and precedes the noun, e. g. Kakóbb pýckiň бале́ть! = well, what do you think of the Russian ballet, isn't it fine! Kakobá пъви́ца! = isn't she a splendid singer! како́въ урожа́й = what a fine harvest!

8. It is not absolutely true that all adjectives have both predicative and attributive forms. The two words радь (fem. ра́да) = glad and гора́здь = capable have only the predicative form. To render their meaning when used attributively synonyms such as ра́достный = joyful, спосо́бный = capable must be used.

Conversely большой = big has no predicative form, and if used predicatively the synonym великій takes its place, e.g. Россія велика́ = Russia is large; further, all words in -скій, e.g. ру́сскій = Russian, in -ской, e.g. городской = of the town, and adjectives denoting materials, e.g. золотой = golden, ка́менный = of stone or brick, have only the attributive form, e.g. he is Russian = онъ ру́сскій, my ring is of gold = моё кольцо́ золото́е, this bridge is of stone = э́тоть мость ка́менный. Otherwise every adjective has both forms and the shorter must be used whenever the adjective is the predicate. To form a shorter from a longer adjective it is only necessary to cut off the endings -ый, -я, and -е, then for the masc. to substitute -ь and for the fem. and neut. nothing; for the pl. cut off -е, -я; e.g. милый, милая, милое = nice, dear, short form = миль, мила́, мила́, рl. мила́.

Examples of use: мила́я дъ́вочка = a nice little girl, дъ́вочка мила́ = the little girl [is] nice, while it is also possible to say дъ́вочка ми́лая = the little girl is a nice (sc. little girl), дъ́вочка така́я ми́лая = the little girl is such a nice (sc. little girl); онъ ми́лый = he is a nice [man], онъ тако́й ми́лый = he is such a nice [man], онъ миль = he is nice, онъ такъ миль = he is so nice. The only difficulty that occurs in forming the short form is that in some cases in the nom. masc. sing. where, after cutting off the -ый, a group of consonants

difficult to pronounce would be left, a vowel is inserted; this is usually e, which when accented becomes ë, e.g. больной = ill—болень, умный = clever—умёнь, сильный = strong—силень ог силёнь, видный = visible—видень, спокойный = calm—спокоень; in the case of достойный = worthy, it is и—достойнь; before -кь it is о, короткій = short—коротокь; крыпкій = strong—крыпокь; лёгкій = light—лёгокь (ехсерt after ж and ш, when it is e, e.g. тяжкій = heavy,—тажекь). О also occurs in a few other words: злой = bad-tempered, wicked—золь; полный = full—полонь.

In many cases, however, groups of consonants, which might seem difficult to the foreigner, but are as nothing to Russians, are left without any vowel being inserted, e.g. möptben dead—möptbe; vöpctben dead—möptbe; vöpctben dead—vöpctben.

- 9. It has been pointed out that in the language as it is spoken and written the predicative form of the adjective only occurs in the nominative; in the folk-poetry, however, which is epic in character, the other cases are often used, usually as fixed epithets for certain things, and recur with great frequency.
- 10. The first halves of compound adjectives which are hard end in -0, e.g. бълокаменный = of white stone, свътло-зелёный = light green, тёмно-сърый = dark gray, волжско-намскій банкь = the bank of the Volga and the Kama, русско-нъмецкій словарь = a Russian-German dictionary.

Corresponding to the soft declension of nouns, there is also one of adjectives, though the number included in it is very much smaller than that belonging to the hard declension:

§ 54. Soft Declension.

Example: cúniñ, cúnss, cúnce = dark blue.

		Singular.	
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
N.	синій	си́няя	синее
G.	си́няго	си́ней	синяго
D.	си́нему	cíne#	си́нему
A.	= N. or G.	синтого	синее
I.	синимъ	си́ней	синимъ
L.	синемъ	синей	синемъ

	Masc.	Plural. Fem.	Neut.
N.	си́ніе	си́ні	FI.
G.		синихъ	
D.		синимъ	
A.		= N. or G.	
I.		снними	
L.		синихъ	

It will be observed that all the soft vowels in the endings of the soft declension correspond to the hard vowels in those of the hard declension, i. e. (n) i to m, n to a, w to y, e to o.

OBSERVATIONS.

- 1. The rule with regard to the acc. sing. masc. and acc. pl. masc. and fem. is the same as for the hard adjectives.
- 2. There is an alternative longer form of three syllables for every inst. sing. fem., e.g. синею and синей.
- 3. The predicative form of the soft adjectives is practically gever used.
 - 4. There are no soft adjectives having the accent on the ending.
- 5. There are a few soft adjectives which are used substantivally, e. g. ло́вчій = huntsman, странчій = attorney, го́нчая (sc. собака) = sporting-dog (cf. obs. 7), лъ́нній = wood-demon, пере́дняя (sc. ко́мната) = ante-room.
- 6. The commonest adjectives declined like синій are only a few in number, and are therefore given here: древній = ancient, искренній = sincere, внутренній = interior, виблиній = exterior, крайній = extreme, зділиній = belonging to this place, from here, тамошній = belonging to that place, from there, вчерынній = of yesterday, сегодняшній = of to-day, завтранній = of to-morrow, весенній (от вешній) = vernal, літній = summer, осенній = autumnal, зімній = winter, послідній = last, средній = middle, теперенній = of to-day (lit. of now), тогданній = former (lit. of then), прежній = former, задній = hinder, передній = front, ўтренній = morning, вечерній = evening, верхній = upper, ніжній = lower (Нижній Новгородь = Lower Newtown), ранній = early, поздній = late.

¹ Except the very common forms: хоро́шъ, хороша́, хороша́, рl. хороши́, горя́чъ, -ча́, -ча́, -ча́, свѣжъ, -жа́, -жа́, -жи́, похо́жъ, похо́жа, похо́же, похо́же, сf. p. 79.

7. Those soft adjectives which end in -min, -min, -min, and -min are declined somewhat differently from cánin, and as some of them are extremely common one is given in full:

хоро́шій, хоро́шая, хоро́шее = nice, good, jolly.

		Singular.	
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
N.	хоро́шій	хоро́шая	xopómee
G.	хоро́шаго	хоро́шей	хоро́шаго
D.	хоро́шему	хоро́шей	хоро́шему
A.	= N. or G.	хоро́шую	хоро́шее
I.	хоро́шимъ	хоро́шей	хоро́шимъ
L.	хоро́шемъ	хоро́шей	хоро́шемъ
	-	Plural.	-
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
N.	хоро́шіе	xope	Rimi
G.		хоро́шихъ	
D.	хоро́шимъ		
A.	= N. or G.		
I.	хоро́шими		
L.		ахинюфох	

This is apparently a mixture of the hard and soft adjectives, but it is really soft, only the m, m, u. and m turn subsequent n, m, o, we into a, m (i), e, y. The following very common words are thus declined: rophium = hot (lit. = burning, e.g. in the phrase rophium bodh (gen.) = some hot water), cuthkin = fresh, moximin = like, members | like, mem

- 8. The first halves of compound adjectives which are soft end in -e, e. g. cpéque-asiárckiñ = Central Asian, древне-греческій = ancient Greek.
- N.B. The adjective derived from Нижній Новгородь (cf. obs. 6) ів нижегородскій, е. g. нижегородская губернія = the Government (i. e. Province) of N. N.
 - 9. Special attention must be called to the plurals: mhóric = many, and

немно́гіе = few, which are declined like хоро́шіє; the respective singulars are adverbs, мно́го = much and немно́го = little; нъ́сколько = some is similarly used except in the nom. plur. for which нъ́которые is invariably substituted (cf. p. 75), e. g.

мно́гіе нахо́дять, что . . . = many people consider (lit. find) that . . . (it would be impossible to use the adverb here), то́лько у (о́чень) немно́гихь сво́и экнпа́жи = only a (very) few have their own carriages, въ нѣсколькихь слу́чаяхь = in several cases. The singular of мно́гіе is also used, e. g. во мно́гомь эта кни́га мнѣ нра́вится = there is much in this book that pleases me (lit. this book in much).

§ 55. Declension of Possessive Adjectives.

There is a large number of these in Russian, and as the declension is different from that of the ordinary adjective, an example is given in full:

HEAHORE = belonging to Ivan (= John).

		Sing u lar.	
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
N.	Ива́новъ	Ива́нова	Ива́ново
G.	Ива́нова	Нва́новой	Ива́нова
D.	Пва́нову	Ива́новой	Ива́нову
A.	= N. or G.	Пва́нову	Ива́ново
I.	Ива́новымъ	Пвановой	Нвановымъ
L.	Ива́новомъ	Ива́новой	Ива́новомъ
		Plural.	
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
N.		Ива́новы	
G.		Ива́новыхъ	
D.		Ива́новымъ	
A.		= N. or G.	
ı.		Ива́новыми	
L.		Ива́новыхъ	

Ива́цовъ may mean either belonging to Ivan, e. g. Пва́новъ домъ, or it may be the surname Iranov, which in this case is an ellipse standing for Ива́новъ сынъ = Ivan's son, or Johnson; Ива́нова may mean belonging to Ivan (fem.), e. g. Ива́нова сестра́ = Ivan's sister, or by itself, prefixed by Госпожа́ (Mrs. or Miss) it means Miss or Mrs. Ivanov—Госпожа Ива́нова = Mrs. Johnson; Ива́ново may mean belonging to Ivan (neut.) or it may be the name of a village, when the word село́ is understood, originally called after Ivan; Ива́новы may mean anything belonging to Ivan in the plural, or it may mean by itself the Ivanovs. Surnames and names of places formed in this way are endless, e. g. Па́вловъ = Paul's, '(Mr.) Paul-

son'. Павлова = '(Mrs. or Miss) Paulson', Петровъ = Peter's, Peterson, Ποπόβι = priest's (from ποιτι = a priest, a very common surname), and include many fantastic names of sometimes curious origin, e.g. Абрикосовъ (apricot's), Философовъ (philosopher's), Гри-SORTORIA (mushroom-eater's). It is from these words that the wellknown Russian patronymics are formed by adding to them - HYL (which is a diminutive with the special meaning son of) for the masculine and -Ha for the feminine, and it must be remembered that it is by their Christian names together with their natronymics that all Russians address one another, unless they are strangers or very intimate friends or relations. For example, if a man's surname is Поповъ, his father's name Потръ (Peter), and his own Christian name Hábent (Paul), his friends will all call him Hábent Петровичь; let us say that his wife's name is Анна (Anne) and her father's Christian name Иванъ, her full name will be Анна Ивановна Попова, and all her friends will call her Анна Ивановна. There is a number of possessive adjectives from soft stems corresponding to the hard represented by Ивановъ, е. g. Андрей = Andrew, makes Андреевъ; Василий = Basil- Васильевъ; Сергъй = Sergius-Ceprь́евь. In this category are included names of not purely Russian origin such as Турге́невъ = Turgénev.

Besides there is a large number of names and words which form their possessive adjectives in -ннь, -ынь, instead of in -овь (the caseendings are exactly the same), e. g. Оома (Thomas) makes Ооминъ, fem. Оомина with patronymic Оомичь (Thomas's son): Илья (Elias) -Ильинъ (patronymics Ильичъ, fem. Ильинична); Никита (Victor) -Никитинъ (the name of a well-known poet); царица (tsaritsa, empress)—Парицынь (a large town on the Volga, sc. городь). Царицыно (вс. село́, a place near Moscow), while царь makes паревъ. This category includes such words as MYKHHHT = husband's (from мужь = husband), женинь = wife's (жена), братиннь = brother's (брать), and сёстрынь = sister's (сестра́), and those derived from diminutives, e.g. Серёжинъ from Серёжа = Сергый = Sergius, Cáшинъ from Cáша = Александръ от Александра = Alexander and Alexandra. Господь = the Lord makes Господень, Господня, Госполне.

All these possessive adjectives have only the predicative form.

Finally there is a large category of possessive adjectives formed especially from names of animals, but including some others;

these have only the attributive form. As the declension is rather different from the others, an example is given:

рыбій = fish's (from pыба = fish).

		Singular.	
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
N.	ры́бій	ры́бья	ры́бье
G.	откадыц	ры́бьей	ры́бьяго
D.	рыбьему	ры́бьей	ры́бьему
A.	= N. or G.	ры́бью	рыбье
I.	ры́бынмъ	рыбьей	ры́быимъ
L.	рыбьемъ	ры́бьей	рыбьемъ
		Plural.	
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
N.		ры́бы	
G.		ахнадаа	
D.		амнадаа	
A.		= N. or G.	
I.		рыбынми	
L.		тхиадіас	

Common words belonging to this category are волчій = nolf's (волкъ), ли́сій = fox's (лисі), собічій = dog's (собіка), ко́шечій = cat's (кошка), медв'якій = bear's (медв'ядь), плічій = bird's (пліца), Божій = God's (Богь), челов'ячій = man's, human (челов'якь), and the ordinal тре́тій = third, e.g. тре́тьяго кла́сса = third class, въ тре́тьемь кла́ссь = third class, and the idiom тре́тьяго дия = thedag before yesterday (lit. = third day).

§ 56. Note on the Terminations of Adjectives.

Adjectives ending in -оватый от -еватый correspond in meaning to English adjectives in -ish, e.g. желтоватый = yellowish (жёлтый = yellow).

Those ending in -а́стый often imply largeness of the attribute, борода́стый = with a big beard (борода́ = brard, борода́тый = bearded. Those in -а́стый imply possession of a certain attribute: дуни́стый = fragrant, possessing sweet smell (духъ = spirit, духи́ (pl.) = scent).

The terminations - "«хонькій, - «хонькій, - "шенькій imply completeness; very often the adjective in its original form precedes the other; these forms are usually used predicatively:

сыть-сытёхонекь = absolutely satiated (with food), одинь-одинёхонекь = quite alone.

The terminations -енькій and -онькій are diminutive:

ма́ленькій = small (from ма́лый, which is seldom used).

THE COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES

§ 57. The Predicative Comparative.

The comparative is formed by cutting off the -min (or -on) of the attributive form of the adjective and adding -he (or -hn) to the stem.

The word thus formed has no singular or plural and is indeclinable; also it can only be used predicatively.

In the case of words of more than three syllables the comparative can be formed by using the positive prefixed by the adverb, GÓTHE = more, as in English, c. g. more intelligible.

Comparison can be expressed in three ways: by the words

- (1) That (inst. sing. of 470), and = than
- (2) нежели

followed by the nominative, and (3) by the genitive of comparison.

Examples: длинный = long, ср. длиниће,

эта палка длиниве чвик та = this stick [is] longer than that, красивый = beautiful, ср. красивве,

мой цвъты красивъе вашихъ (gen.) = my flowers [are] more beautiful than yours,

прямой = straight, ср. прям bo,

э́та доро́га прямѣе той (gen.) = this road [is] straighter than that, or purely predicatively:

эта палка длиннье = this stick [is the] straighter.

If the comparative is followed by $er\acute{o} = his$, $e\ddot{n} = hers$, or hxb = theirs, a conjunction is necessary, e.g.

мой домъ красивье нежели ero = my house [is] more beautiful than his, since красивье ero would mean more beautiful than he.

An example of an adjective of more than three syllables:

образо́ванный = cultured; predic. comp. бо́ль́е образо́ванъ (after which a conjunction is necessary) ог образо́ваннье,

мы бо́лье образо́ваны чьмъ они́ = we [are] more cultured than they. Бо́лье is also invariably used with радь = glad, which has no comparative, and with свы́жій = fresh and чвёрстый = hard, stale (of bread), and похо́жій = like, e.g.,

это болве похоже на + acc. = this is more like . . .

To express less the adverb ménte with similar construction is used, e. g.,

они менье образованы чыть мы = they are less cultured than we.

A very large number of adjectives, however, form their comparatives by adding -e instead of -he. Some of these are adjectives whose stems originally ended in a consonant, such as k, liable to be softened into u before the palatal h and absorbing it in the process, others are the result of analogical influence or quite irregular. As they are all extremely common words a full list is given:

```
высо́кій = high, tall
                                      ср. выше
низкій = low
                                          пиже
глубокій = deep
                                          глубже
ме́лкій = shallow (also petty, small
  change, fine print or writing)
                                          мельче
широ́кій = broad
                                          ши́ре
ўзкій = паттою
                                          ýже¹
лалёкій = distant
                                          дальше
Gли́зкій = near
                                          ближе
то́лстый = thick, fat (especially)
                                          толше
то́нкій = thin
                    of solids
                                          то́ныне
rycróf = thick (
                 especially of
                                          гуще
жидкий = thin \ liquids and gases
                                          жиже
ръдкій = rare, sparse
                                         рѣже
pannin = early
                                          раньше
долгій = long (of time)
                                          до́лыпе
коро́ткій = short
                                          коро́че
крвпкій = strong
                                          крупче
простой = simple
                                          проще
```

¹ Not to be confused with the conjunction ymé = already.

стро́гій = severe ср. строже тихій = calm. slow тише лёгкій = light ле́гча дорого́й = dearдороже пешёвый = chean дешевле . foráтый = richбогаче молодой = young моложе •• ста́рый = oldстарше emùr твёрдый = firm, hard твёрже слапкій = sweet слаще rópькій = bitter ordòn жа́ркій = hot жа́рчо большой = big больше ма́лый (ма́ленькій) = little ме́ныше хоро́шій = nice, good лучше худой (плохой, дурной) = badхуже

A few adjectives have two forms of the comparative : тижёлый = heavy, ср. тижеле and тижеле ноздийе = late, ср. поэже and поздийе.

Худо́й has two meanings, (1) thin (of human beings and animals) and (2) bad; the comparative of the first meaning is худѣе and of the second ху́же. Fat (of human beings and animals) is usually rendered by но́лный (ср. нолнѣе) = full, though то́лстый (but only in the positive) is also used less politely of human beings.

As regards the accent the following rule may be mentioned: all so-called irregular comparatives (e. g. больше) are accented on the penultimate. Of the others, adjectives of two syllables are accented on the h of -he; also элой = wicked—эльс. Adjectives of more than two syllables keep the accent in the comparative where it was in the positive, e.g. красивый = beautiful—красивне; to this rule there are a few exceptions:

здоро́вый = healthy ср. здоровь́о холо́дный = cold , холодны́в гори́чій = hot , гори́чь́е

(ropáviň is used of substances, e. g. water, food, also of the emotions; жа́ркій is used especially of the weather; тёплый = исит (ср. теплы́е) is used for everything).

δ **58**. The Attributive Comparative.

When the comparative is used, not for purposes of strict comparison but as an attributive adjective expressing a stronger degree of any quality than is expressed by the positive, the form in te, &c., cannot be employed. Instead it must be either expressed by using coarse with the positive or by another special form which some adjectives possess; this form ends in -bania, -айшій, -шій, or -шой and is declined like хоро́шій (or like молодо́й).

As only a few adjectives are commonly used in this form a full list is given:

```
высо́кій = high, tall, ср. выстій, е. g.
  высшіе чины = the upper ranks (of officials)
  въ высшей степени = in the highest (lit. rery high) degree
низкій = low, ср. низній, е. g.
  низшія цѣны = lower prices
  низшее мъсто = a lower place
дальный = distant, ср. дальный e.g.
  дальнъйшее развитие = the subsequent development (there is no
    attributive comparative from далёкій)
старый = old, ср. старшій, е. g.
  старшій брать = elder brother
молодой = young, ср. младшій (from another stem млад-), е.д.
  мла́дшая дочь = younger daughter
[xopómiň = nice, good], cp. nýumiň, e. g.
  лучшіе магазины = the superior shops
xудо́й = bad, ср. xýдшій, е. g.
  ху́дше сорта́ = inferior sorts
большой = big, ср. больший, e. g.
  большею частью = for the greater part
  большіе города́ = the larger towns
малый (маленькій) = little, ср. меньшій = lesser and меньшой =
```

younger, e.g.

cámoe méньшее = the very least меньшой сынъ = younger (or youngest) son.

The form in -hamia and -aamia possessed by several adjectives, e.g. слабый = weak, слабыйній, крынкій = strong, крынчайшій, ів in meaning rather a superlative (like our rery weak, very strong) than a comparative. In almost all cases except those mentioned the attributive comparative can be and is usually expressed by 6ónbe with the positive, e.g.

это бо́лье красивая шлы́па = this [is] the prettier hat.

Rather + the positive or comparative is expressed by no- and the comparative, e.g.

мнѣ нужна́ палка по-длиннѣо = I want (to me is necessary) a rather long(er) stick

я хочу́ что́-нибудь по-лу́чше, по-красн́вѣе, по-деше́вле = I want something rather better (superior), prettier, cheaper (sc. than what you've shown me).

§ 59. The Superlative.

The superlative can be expressed in several ways; the commonest way is to use the pronoun cámhin with the positive (and in some cases the comparative), e.g.

самый красивый — most beautiful самый некрасивый — ugliest самый лучний — best самый плохой самый плохой = worst самый большой — biggest самый маленькій — smallest самый маленькій — smallest самый маленькій — youngest самый младшій — youngest самый нісшій — highest самый нісшій — lowest самый крыкій — strongest самый крыкій — strongest самый слабый — weakest, &c.

These can be used either predicatively or attributively, e.g. cáмый лучшій магазинь = the best shop это будеть cáмое лучшее = that will be the best (sc. way).

Another way of forming the superlative is by means of the prefix Han-, but only a few adjectives (always comparatives) are treated in this way and even they are seldom used, the form being considered archaic and pedantic. The commonest are:

наилу́чшій = best наибо́льшій = biggest наиме́ньшій = smallest Another way of expressing very is by means of the prefix npe-, which is followed by the positive; this form is quite common, e. g.

прехоро́шенькій = very pretty преподо́бный = very reverend прескверный = very bad

пре- also occurs in the word превосходный = excellent.

The termination - Éminin, - Aminin is added to a few adjectives with the meaning of a superlative; the commonest are:

высо́кій = high, superl. высоча́йшій велікій = great, superl. велича́йшій малый = little, superl. малъ́йшій

e. g. безь малъ́йшаго сомнъ́нія = without the smallest doubt глубокій = deep, superl. глубоча́йшій

чистый = clean, pure, superl. чистыйній любезный = amiable, superl. любезныйній

дорогой = dear, superl. дражайний (from a stem драг-).

Yet another way of expressing the superlative predicatively is by the predicative comparative followed by Bekke, e.g.

это мъсто лучше всъхъ = this place [is] the best of all.

THE NUMERALS

§ 60. The Cardinal and Ordinal Numerals.

1	одинъ, одна, одно	первый
2	два (M. and N.) двѣ (F.)	второ́й
3	три	тре́тій
4	четы́ре	четвёртый
5	ніть	пя́тый
6	шесть	шестой
7	семь	седьмой
8	восемь	восьмой
9	де́вять	девя́тый
10	де́сять	десятый
11	оди́нна дца ть	одиннадцатый
12	двѣна́дцать	дввнадцатый
13	трина́дцать	трина́дца тый

14	четы́рнадцать	четы́рнадцатый
15	пятн а ́дцать	иятна́дцатый
16	шестна́дцать	шестна́дцатый
17	семна́дцать	семна́дцатый
18	восемна́дцать	восемнадцатый
19	девятна́дцать	девятна́дцатый
20	два́дцать	двадцатый
21	двадцать одинь одна, &с.	дв адцать пе́рвый
22	двадцать два́, двѣ́	двадцать второй
23	двадцать три	двадцать третій
30	тридцать	тридцатый
40	со́рокъ	сороковой
50	пятьдеся́ть	пятидеся́тый
60	шестьдеся́ть	шестидеся́тый
70	семьдесять	семид ес я́тый
80	во́семьдесять	восьмидеся́тый
90	девяно́сто	девяно́стый
100	сто	сотый
200	двѣсти	двухео́тый
300	три́ста	трё хсо́тый
400	четы́реста	четырёхсо́тый
5 0 0	иятьео́ть	нятисо́тый
1,000	тысяча	ты́сячный
2,000	двѣ ты́сячи	дву хты сячный
5,000	пять ты́сячъ	пятиты́сячный
10,000	десять тысячь	йынркэйтиткээг
100,000	сто тысячь	стотысячный
1,000,000	милліо́нъ	йынноікким

§ 61. Declension and Use of the Numerals.

Одинъ is declined as follows:

Singular.

		sıng u ar.	
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
N.	одинъ	одна	одно́
G.	одного́	одной	одного́
D.	одному́	одной	одному́
A.	= N. or G.	одну́	одно́
I.	однимъ	одной	одни́мъ
L.	одно́мъ	одной	одно́мъ

Plural.

	Masc.		Neut.	Fem.
N.		одни		одиѣ
G.		однихъ		однѣхъ
D.		одни мъ		од иѣм ъ
A.		= N. or (3.	= N. or G.
I.		одними		одн ѣм и
L.		однихъ		одиѣхъ

The plural of одинъ is used in several ways, e. g.

однѣ да́мы = ladies only мы одни́ = (1) only we = (2) we [are] alone

(= (2) we [are] alone одними руками = with the hands only

but одной рукой = with one hand

одними словами = by words alone

but однимь словомъ = in one word

одинъ Богь знаеть = God alone knows

одно и то-жо = one and the same thing

однообразный = monotonous.

Одинъ, одна, одно is used in all numbers compounded with 1 according to the gender of the substantive which follows, which is always in the nom. sing., e.g.

двадцать одинь годь = twenty-one years сорокь одинь рубль = forty-one roubles тысяча и одна ночь = the thousand and one nights.

два, дв $b = two$.			66a, 66b = both.	
M	asc. Neut.	Fem.	Masc. Neut.	Fem.
N.	два	двѣ	о́ба	όδቴ
Ğ.	дву	ďХЪ	обо́нхъ	- об ѣ́их ъ
D.	дву	мъ	обо́имъ	объимъ
A.	= N. or G.		= N. or G.	
I.	дву	MÁ	обо́ими	обѣими
L.	дву	XT.	ахиодо	объ́нхъ

```
три = three, четыре = four.
```

N.	три	четы́ре
G.	трёхъ	четырёхъ
D.	трёмъ	четырёмъ
A.	= N. or G.	= N. or G.
I.	тремя́	четырьмя́
L.	трёхъ	четырёхъ

Substantives of any gender which follow ABA, TPH, and VETERPE, as well as all numerals compounded with these three, are invariably in the gen. sing., not in the nom. pl. The reason for this is that ABA originally took the dual and the nom. dual masc. ended in -a, i.e. was in appearance identical with the gen. sing. When the dual became obsolete the ending -a still continued to be used after ABA but came to be looked on as the gen. sing. Subsequently through analogical influence the gen. sing. of feminine nouns was used after ABA, and also the gen. sing. of nouns of all genders came to be used after TPH and VETERPE as well as after ABA. The old dual is still apparent in the word ABACTH = 200; e.g.

```
два бра́та = two brothers

три стола́ = three tables

двѣ сестры́ = two sisters (nom. pl. = сёстры)

четы́ре села́ = four villages (nom. pl. = сёла)

два́ддать два́ го́да = twenty-two years

сто три рублы́ = one hundred and three roubles, &c.
```

If an adjective comes between the numeral and the noun, it can be in either the nom. pl. or the gen. pl., not in the singular, as might be expected, e.g.

```
двъ красивыя (от красивыхъ) дъвочки = two pretty little girls три большие (от большихъ) дома = three large houses.
```

The effect of putting the numeral after the noun is to make the former somewhat indefinite:

```
дин два = about two days, two or three days года четыре = about four years.
```

Of course, if used in any other case but the nominative, both numeral and substantive, and when there is an adjective, that also, agree, the regular cases of the plural being used, e. g.

- N. два маленькіе мальчика = two little boys
- G. двухъ маленькихъ мальчиковъ = of two little boys
- D. двумъ маленькимъ мальчикамъ = to ,, " ,, &c.

- N. THE COOTPM = three sisters
- G. TDÖXTA CECTÖDTA = of
- трёмъ сёстрамъ = to D. or cectdáms, &c.

As regards oba, obt the masc. and neut. take the gen. sing., but the fem. takes the nom. pl., hence:

όба брата

оба села́ (nom. pl. would be сёла)

but объ сёстры (gen, sing. would be сестры).

II are fire, and all numerals ending in -b up to and including тридцать:

	Masc.	Neut.	Fen
N.	1	аты	
G.	1	пяти	
D.	1	іяти́	
A.	1	ІЯТЬ	
I.	I	итыю́	
L.	r	ити	

N.B. восемь has G. D. L. восьми and I. восемью.

IIятьдесять = fifty, шестьдесять = sixty, семьдесять = seventy, восемь десять = eighty:Masc. Neut. Fem.

N. пятьнесять G. пятилесяти D. пятилесяти A. пятьлеся́ть I. пятьюдесятью

пятилесяти The numbers from nath onwards are really feminine nouns, equivalent for example to the French une cinquaine.

The numbers from 11-19 are composed of the single numerals and ten joined together by Ha = on to, e.g.

трина́дцать = три на десять = three on to ten.

Пваниять and тридцать are two-tens and three-tens.

L.

In интьдесять, шестьдесять, семьдесять and восемьдесять the -десять is an old gen. pl. and пятьдесять might be translated in French une cinquaine de dizaines.

Со́рокъ = forty (from the Greek теогара́когта) is declined like столь, i. e.

G. copoká

D. сороку́, &с.,

and девяносто = ninety and cro = one hundred are declined like a hard neuter noun except when followed by a noun, when they have only one ending for all the cases, viz. -a, e. g.

ста рублями = with a hundred roubles. въ сорока случаяхъ = in forty cases.

Also when compounded with other numerals, e. g.

въ ста шести домахъ = in one hundred and six houses.

Двісти = 200, триста = 300, четы́реста = 400, пятьсо́ть = 500, &с.

N. двести триста четы́реста пятьсо́ть

G. двухь соть трёхь соть четырёхь соть пяти соть

D. нвумъ стамъ трёмъ стамъ четырёмъ стамъ пяти стамъ

D. двужъ стамъ трёмъ стамъ четырёмъ стамъ пяти́ стамъ

A. = N. or G.

I. двумя стами тремя стами четырымя стами пятью стами

L. двухъ стахъ трёхъ стахъ четырёхъ стахъ ияти́ стахъ

Тысяча is declined like a feminine noun in -ча

Singular. Plural.

 N. ты́сяча
 е. g. двѣ ты́сячи
 пять ты́сячь

 G. ты́сячи
 двухъ ты́сячь
 пяти ты́сячъ

D. тысячь двумъ тысячамъ пяти тысячамъ

A. ты́сячу = N. or G.

I. тысячей (also тысячыю) двуми тысячами пятью тысячами L. тысячей двухъ тысячахъ пятй тысячахъ

милліонт is declined like столь, but with the accent fixed on the third syllable throughout.

The substantives which follow all numerals ending in -1 from 5 onwards, except compounds of 1, 2, 3, and 4, such as 21, 32, 44, &c., provided the numerals are in the nom. or acc., are always in the gen. pl. The reason for this is that, as has already been stated, here, &c., are really feminine substantives, and so the noun following is naturally put in the gen. pl. This can be seen in the word herefore = 50, which is really a nom. sing. (here) followed by a (now obsolete) gen. pl. (here) and means a five of tens. If followed by any other cases than the nom, or acc. both numeral

and substantive agree, as in the case of два, три, &c. Besides the numerals which end in -ь, со́рокъ = 40, сто = 100, двъсти = 200, триста = 300, &c., ты́сяча = 1,000, and милліо́нъ come under the above rule, e.g.

пять рублей = five roubles
десять дней = ten days
but N.B. съ пятью льтьми = with five children.

§ 62. Cardinal Numbers in Composition.

Одинъ makes одно-, e. g. однодворець = freeholder (peasant).

Два makes дву- and двух-, e. g. двугла́вый = double-headed, двусмы́сленный = ambiguous, двуль́тній = tico-year-old, but двухэтажный = tico-storied (house), двухм'єстный = having tico seats.

Три makes тре- in треугольный = three-cornered, otherwise трёх-; e. g. трёхльтній = three-year-old, трёхрублёвый = of three roubles.

Четыре makes четверо- in четвероугольный = four-cornered, square, otherwise четырёх-; е. g. четырехэтыжный = of four floors.

All others end in -n, e.g. семиль́тния война́ = the seven years'

Notice the forms : двою́родный брать = first cousin (masc.) двою́родная сестра́ = ,, , (fem.) трою́родный, &c. = second cousin.

For numerals in composition in the expression of money-values, cf. § 69.

§ 63. Ordinal Numbers.

The ordinal numbers are declined like attributive adjectives, второй, шестой, седьмой, восьмой, аnd сороковой like молодой, тротій like рыбій, and the rest like бълый. The ordinals have no short or predicative form, hence

я пе́рвый = I am the first.

The following idiomatic uses of the ordinals may be observed:

во-первыхь = firstly, in the first place во-вторыхь = secondly во-третьихь = thirdly самь-третій = I and two others самь-четвёртый = I and three others.

For the use of the ordinals in the expression of time, cf. § 68.

§ 64. Distributive Numbers.

These are expressed by prefixing the preposition no to the cardinal numbers; два, три, четыре, and сорокь remain in the nom. and the following substantive in the gen. sing. or plur., but all the other numbers are put in the dat. with the substantive in the dat. after одинъ and in the gen. plur. after all the others, e.g.

онъ подариять намъ по одной книгћ = he gave us one book each

у нась по двв, у вась по три, а у нась по четыре собаки = we have two, you have three, and they have four dogs each

у обонкъ по пяти лошадей = they have both five horses each.

For the use of the distributives in the expression of money-values, cf. § 69.

§ 65. Multiplicative Numerals.

These are expressed as follows:

разъ = once (lit. = a blow)
два ра́за = twice (lit. = two blows)
три ра́за = thrice
четь́іре ра́за = four times
пять разъ = five times.

meerь разь, &c.; разь is the old gen. plur. still used in a few phrases of this kind where it had become crystallized; the gen. plur. in -овь originally belonged to only a few nouns, but became general gradually.

In counting (for games, music, &c.) the formula is: разъ, два, три, четыре = one, two, three, four.

The three words однажды = once, дважды = twice, and трижды = thrice, were borrowed from Old Bulgarian, but are almost obsolete; однажды is still sometimes used for one fine day, or once upon a time, but разъ ог одинъ разъ is more usual.

Notice the following idioms in which para occurs:

сколько разь (gen. pl.) = how many times, how often много разь (gen. pl.) = many times нъсколько разь (gen. pl.) = several times сразу (gen. sing.) = all at once, suddenly

and especially the difference between:

неразъ = more than once

e.g. я неразъ говорать... = I have said more than once...

and HH pásy He . . . = not once

e. g. онъ ни разу но-быль у нась = he has not once been at our house.

The expression twice as is rendered by BT-ABÓS with the comparative, e.g.

э́то вино́ въ-дво́е лу́чше тоrо́ = this wine is twice as good as that.

Ва́ше перо́ въ-тро́е доро́же моего́ = your pen is three times as dear as mine.

For larger numbers it is more usual to turn it, e.g.

этоть театрь въ тысячу разъ красивне чёмъ тоть = this theatre is a thousand times more beautiful than that.

Expressions such as ten-fold, used predicatively, are rendered by Bb-Accarepo, &c.

The adjectival multiplicatives:

двойной = double, two-fold, тройной = treble, three-fold,

are quite common and are declined like молодо́й.

Simple = npocróň.

§ 66.

Collective Numerals.

These are used for the numbers from 2-8 and 10:

 2
 дво́е
 6
 іно́стеро

 3
 тро́е
 7
 се́меро

 4
 че́тверо
 8
 во́сьмеро

 5
 па́теро
 10
 десі́теро

дво́е and тро́е are declined as follows:

N. двое

G. двойхъ

D. двоймъ.

A. = N. or G.

І. двойми

L. двойхъ

the others:

N. четверо

G. четверыхъ

D. четверымъ

 $A. = \tilde{N}. \text{ or } G.$

I. четверыми

L. четверыхъ

These numerals are especially common in phrases such as the following:

насъ трое = there are three of us, which also means we three (it would be impossible to say мы три), у меня четверо дътей = I have four children, ихъ было шестеро = there were (lit. was) six of them, and with nouns which are only used in the plural, e.g. сани = sledge, шестеро саней = six sledges, часы = watch, clock, трое часовъ = three watches. Notice сотня = 100 (often sc. soldiers).

N.B. въ-двоёмъ = t dt e - d - t dt e

въ троёмъ = à trois

пара (лошадей) = a pair of horses

тройка = three horses abreast

четвёрка = four "

Тро́ица = the Trinity

дюжина = a dozen, but must only be used of things, never of people

деся́токь = ten, e. g. деся́тки ты́сячь = tens of thousands близнены́ = tvoins.

Notice the curious idiom a came-appres = I and another.

двойка = deuce (at cards)

семёрка = весен

тройка = three

восьмёрка = eight девя́тка = nine

четвёрка = four пятёрка = five

деситка = ten.

mecrерка = six

For the use of the collectives as multiplicatives cf. § 65.

§ 67.

Fractions.

Половина = a half, and is declined like a hard fem. noun, with the accent fixed on the third syllable.

21 = два (от двв) съ половиной

8 = три съ половиной, &с.

For 1½ there is a special word:

полтора (made up of nox- and второй = half-second) for the masculine, and полторы for the feminine, e. g.

N. полтора́ фунта (gen. sing.) = $1\frac{1}{2}$ lb. полтора́ саже́ни , = $1\frac{1}{2}$ fathom.

For all the other cases the form полутора is used for both genders, the noun being declined in the plural, e.g. полутора фунтами.

150 = полтора́ста

N. полтора́ста

G. D. I. L. полутораста

Half-in composition is treated as follows:

N. полфунта = $\frac{1}{2}$ lb.

G. полуфунта

D. полуфунту

A. = N.

I. полуфунтомъ

L. полуфу́нтв

The plural is полуфунты, &c., like an ordinary hard masculine noun.

полрюмки = half a wine-glass would be declined similarly, but with the feminine substantival endings.

For полдень and полночь cf. § 68.

- 13 = треть, a feminine noun declined like ло́шадь but with the accent fixed on the first syllable;
- 3 = двѣ тре́ти;
- 1 = четверть, feminine, declined like треть;
- 3 = три четверти.

Other fractions are expressed as follows:

- $\frac{1}{k} = \text{однá пáтая (sc. часть} = part);$
- 2 = двѣ пя́тыхъ;
- три седьмыхъ.

§ 68.

Expression of Time.

what time is it? — который чась?

at what hour . . .? = BL KOTÓPONT HACÝ . . .? (cf. § 39, obs. 7)

at ,, = Bb 4acb

1.15 = чась съ четвертью (= 1½)

ог четверть второго (= ½ of the 2nd)

1.5 = ust muhýte bropóro (= 5 min. of the 2nd)

1.30 = половина второго

ог второто половина

at 1.30 — въ половину второго

```
= безъ четверти два (= without 1/2)
       1.45
     at 1.45
                 ог вь чась сорокь пять
       2 o'clock = два часа́
     nt
                 = въ лва часа́
at about
                 = часа́ въ лва
       2.10
                 = десять минуть третьяго
       2.30
                 = половина третьяго
       3 o'clock = три часа́
       3.50
                 = безъ десяти (минуть) четыре
       4 o'clock = четыре часа
       5
                 = пять часовъ
       10.30
                 = половина одинналнатаго
       12 o'clock = двінадцать часовь
       12.15
                 = четверть перваго
       12.30
                 = половина перваго
                 = безъ четверти часъ
       12.45
                 = безъ пяти (минутъ) часъ.
       12.55
               half-an-hour = полчаса́
               2 hours
                            = лва часа
                            = два часа съ половиной
               21 hours
               11 hour

    полтора́ часа́.
```

Notice especially the word cýtku (nom. pl. fem.) = the 24 hours, a day and night, e.g.

```
тро́е су́токъ (gen. pl.) = 72 hours

цёлыя су́тки = a whole 24 hours

четы́ре су́токъ = four days and nights

пять су́токъ = five ...
```

minute = минута 'one minute' = одну минуту, минуточку 'this minute' = сію минуту second = секунда this instant сію секунду or сей-часъ in one minute **= въ** одну минуту in Are minutes = черезь пять минуть in two hours че́резъ два часа́

N.B. vepess can also give the meaning every other:

че́резъ чась = (1) in an hour's time (2) every other hour.

Notice the difference between:

about two hours = о́коло (adv.) два часа́ about two o'clock = о́коло (prep.) двухъ часо́въ

erery minute (incessantly) = по-минутно

полдень = midday

Gen. полудня Loc. полудни

The phrase по-полу́дни = after noon is very common, as Russian has no single word for afternoon, e.g.

at 4 p.m. = въ 4 ч. по-полу́дни in the afternoon = (1) по-полу́дни (2) днёмъ (inst. of день)

по́лночь = midnight

Gen. полуночи.

N.B. half-a-day = полдня

half-a-night = полно́чи

daily (adj.) = ежедне́вный (adv.) = ежедне́вно.

The days of the week are:

Bоскресе́ніе = Sunday (lit. = resurrection)

понедъльникъ = Monday (= after the holiday)

 вторникь
 = Tuesday (cf. второй)

 среда
 = Wednesday (= centre)

 четве́ргь
 = Thursday (cf. четвёртый)

on Sunday = въ Воскресе́ніе

on Monday — въ понедъльникъ

N.B. on Tuesday = во вторникъ

on Wednesday = въ среду

on Thursday = въ четве́ргъ

on Friday = въ пя́тницу on Saturday = въ суббо́ту

on Sundays = по Воскресе́ніямъ, &с.

```
week = недын
fortnight = двь недыли
this week = эту недылю
every week = каждую недылю
for a week = на недылю
weekly = еженедыльный.
diom:
```

Notice the idiom:

```
ту недвяю = next week or last week (lit. that week)
на той недвяв = ,, ,, (sc. in or during . . .).
```

The months are:

```
янва́рь = January ію́ль = July
февра́ль = February а́вгусть = August
ма́рть = March сента́брь = September
апра́ль = April окта́брь = October
ма́й = May ноа́брь = November
ію́нь = June дека́брь = December
```

they are all masculine.

in January = въ январѣ in May = въ ма́ъ.

In the words for the first two and the last four months the accent is always on the ending, in the others it remains throughout where it is in the nominative.

```
Month
                                = мѣсяпъ
monthly
                                = ежемѣсячный
the date
                                = число́
Jan. 1st
                                = первое января (вс. число)
on Feb. 2nd
                                = второго февраля (вс. числа)
on March 3rd
                                = третьяго марта
of the fifth of April (e.g. letter) = оть пятаго апрыя
on May 21st

    двадцать-перваго мая

on June 30th
                                = тридцатаго іюня
on July 31st
                                = тридцать-перваю іюля
what date is it to-day?
                                = како́е (ог кото́рое) сего́дня число́ ?
year
                                = годъ
half-year
                                = полгода
two years
                                — два года
three years
                                = три года
four years
                                = четыре года
```

```
but five years
                                — пять льть (lit. = summers)
   six years
                                = шесть лъть
till twenty-one years

двадцать-одинь годъ

    twenty-two years

двадцать-два года

   twenty-five years
                                = двадцать-цять літь
                           &c.
how old are you?
                                = сколько вамъ лъть?
twenty-three
                               = двадцать-три года
                                = вь этомъ году
this year
last year

въ прошломъ году́

                               = прошлогодный
last year's

вь будущемъ году́

next year
                                = въ тысяча восемь соть девяносто
in the year 1899
                                    девитомъ году (i. e. only the last
                                    numeral is an ordinal)
                                = въ (тысяча) девить соть четыр-
in the year 1914
                                    надцатомъ году
of the year 1900

тысяча девять сотаго года

the twenties
                                = двадцатые годы
of the thirties
                                = тридцатыхъ годовъ
in the forties
                                = въ сороковыхъ годахъ
       (but only of historical periods, not of personal age)
                       century = (1) въкъ
                                  (2) cronstic.
  Ago is expressed in two ways: (1) by 3a with the acc., e. g.
                    за два года = tico years ago
or (2) by тому назадь (= to it back), e.g.
             пять лыть тому назадь = fire years ago
              in a year's time = черезъ годъ
              every other year = (1) черезъ годъ
                                (2) каждые два года
              every year

каждый годъ

                              ежегодный
              yearly
           Время
                                   = Time
           со временемъ
                                   = in time, gradually
           время отъ времени
                                   == from time to time
           во время (+gen.)
                                   = during
           во-время
                                   = in time (sc. punctually)
```

```
= it is time
    пора
    порами
                             = at times
    поро́й
                             = from that time on
    сь техь поръ
    до техъ поръ
                             = till then
    до сихъ поръ
                             = till now
    сь какихъ порь?
                             = since when?
but въ-пору
                             = it fits (of clothes, &c.)
    не въ-пору
                             = it does not fit.
```

§ 69. Expression of money-values.

```
=\frac{1}{3}-rouble (= 50 kopeks)
Полтинникь
рубль
                 = a \ rouble (= 1s. 11d.)
полтора рубля
                 = 11 rouble
два рубля
                 = 2 roubles
два съ полтиной = 2\frac{1}{5} roubles
иять рублей
                 = 5 roubles
пять сь полтиной = 5\frac{1}{7} roubles
копънка
                 = a \ kopek \ (= \frac{1}{2}d.)^1
двѣ копѣйки
                = 2 kopeks
пять копъекъ
                 = 5 kopeks
  60 kopeks = шестьдесять копъекъ
            ог шесть гривенъ
  70
            = семьдесять копъекъ
            or cemь гривенъ
  80
             = восемьдесять конбекъ
            ог восемь гривенъ.
```

The following are the colloquial names of the current coins and notes:

```
= 5 kopeks (copper)
цята́к
пятачокъ
                                     (nickel)
гривенникъ
                          = 10
                                      (nickel; алтынь = 3 kopeks)
пятиалтынный
                          = 15
двугривенникъ
                          = 20
полтина
                                      (silver)
цвиковый )
                          = 1 rouble
(ог рубль) \
```

¹ Also spelt копенка, gen. pl. копеекъ.

```
трёхрублёвая бумажка
                          = S-rouble note
пятирублёвая бумажка
                           = 5-rouble note
or синонькая (little blue)
десятирублёвая бумажка )
                          = 10 ,
ог красненькая (little red)
двадцатипятирублёвая
                           = 25 ,,
  бумажка
сторублёвая бумажка
                          = 100 ..
or радужная (rainbow)
однокопъечная марка = a \cdot l.kopek stamp
                 = a \cdot 2 \cdot kopek
двух----
Tpëx----
                    = a 3-kopek
                                     ••
                 = a \cdot kopek
четырёх ——
семи-
                      = a 7 \cdot kopek
                      = a 10 \cdot kopek ,,
лесяти —
```

The preposition no followed by a numeral = at . . .; the numerals are in the dat., or acc., cf. § 61:

```
двѣ ма́рки по одно́й копѣ́йкь = tico 1-kopek stamps пять ма́рокъ по-двѣ копѣ́йки = five 2-kopek ,, де́сять ма́рокъ по-семи́ копѣ́екь = ten 7-kopek ,, (от де́сять семи́копѣ́ечныхъ ма́рокъ, &c.).
```

The question at what price? is expressed by the idiom no-

по-чёмъ эти галстуки? = at what price (sc. how much) (are) these neckties?

но-два рубли = two roubles each но-пяти рублей = five roubles each.

For the use of the preposition BD with similar meaning cf. § 65.

THE ADVERB

§ 70. The adverb is generally the same as the nominative singular neuter of the predicative adjective, e. g.

```
милый милая милое = nice: attributive form миль мила мило = ,, predicative form мило = nicely хоро́шая хоро́шее = good, nice
```

```
хоро́шъ хоро́ша́ хоро́шо́ = good, nice
хоро́шо́ = well; all right.
Similarly: шо́хо = badly
ду́рно = "
```

дурно = ,, скве́рно = ,, нехорошо́ = ,, &c.

Soft adjectives form the adverb with e instead of o, e.g.

крайній = extreme крайне = extremely и́скренній = sincere и́скренне = sincerely

but many of them take to like the hard adjectives, e.g.

ра́нній = early ра́но = early (adv.) по́здній = late по́здно = late (adv.) давній = former давно́ $= long\ ago$

искренній also makes искренно.

Owing to the fact that the present tense of the verb to be is almost quite obsolete in Russian, the adverb is very frequently used as an impersonal verb forming a sentence by itself, e.g.

ра́но = it is early (often = too early)
по́здно = it is late (often = too late)
жа́рко = it is hot
тепло́ = it is warm
бли́зко = it is near
высоко́ = it is high

хорошо́, что вы пришли́ = it is well (or nice) that you have come возможно, что онъ придёть = it is possible, that he will come невозможно, чтобы онъ пришёть = it is impossible, that he should come.

Several adverbs can be accented in two ways, each equally correct, e.g.

темно́ от тёмно = it is dark

колодно́ от ко́лодно = it is cold

далеко́ от далёко = it is far

глубоко́ от глубоко = it is deep (also = deeply figuratively).

Adjectives in -ckië form the adverb by changing -ckië into

. проническій = ironical иронически = ironically

similarly: поэтически = poetically
дружески = in a friendly way, warmly
хронически = chronically, &c.

The preposition no prefixed to such adverbs gives the meaning in the manner of:

по-пріятельски = in a friendly way по-моско́вски = in Moscow fashion

and if the adverb is one formed from the name of a nationality it can also mean $in \dots e. g.$

по-русски = in Russian по-англійски = in English по-нъмецки = in German по-французски = in French

e. g. я ум'єю по-ру́сски ог я говорю́ по-ру́сски = I саn (sc. talk) Russian, or I talk Russian

я не понимаю по-нъменки = I don't understand German.

Notice the idiom:

это по-каковски? = in what language is that?

Otherwise adverbial expressions with 110- are formed by using the dative singular of the adjective or pronoun, e.g.

по-но́вому = in modern fashion
по-ста́рому = in old fashion
по-сво́ему = in one's own way
по-мо́ему = in my own way or in my opinion accent)
по-ва́шему = in your way or in your opinion
по-во́енному = in military fashion.

Cf. also § 73.

§ 71.

Adverbs of Place.

 здёсь туть 1
 = here

 тамь = there
 возд'в (по)всюду 1

 гдв = where
 = where

 нагд'в = nowhere
 = nowhere

¹ Rather colloquial than literary.

e.g. нигды ныть мыста = there is no place (or room) anywhere нигды никого ныть = there is no one anywhere

не́гдь = there is nowhere to . . .

e. g. нетдъ състь = there is no place to sit down

гдъто = somewhere, in a certain place (sc. I don't remember where, I don't know where, or I don't wish to say where)

e. g. онъ гдѣ-то въ Россін = he is somewhere in Russia

гдь-нибудь = somewhere, anywhere

e. g. онъ проведёть зиму гдѣ-нибудь за-грани́цей = he will spend the winter somewhere abroad

гдь. бы то ни было = wherever you like тамъ и сямъ = here and there.

The adverbs bither, &c., are far more frequently used in Russian than in English; in English we say I am going there, but in Russian always I am going thither; in English where have you put my book? but in Russian whither, &c.; in English where did you get that hat? but in Russian whence, &c.

сюда́ = hither

e. g. пойди сюда = come here

туда́ = thither

 ${f e}.\,{f g}.\,{f g}$ ндý туда́ =I am going there

куда́ = whither

- e.g. куда́ вы положили мою книгу? = where have you put my book?

 никуда́ = nowhither
- e.g. я никуда не пду = I am not going anywhere

но́куда = there is no place whither

e.g. некуда итти = there is nowhere to go to

куда-то = somewhither

e.g. онъ куда-то ущёль = he has gone off somewhere

куда-нибудь = somewhither

e.g. пойдёмь куда́-нибудь = let's go somewhere (anywhere) куда́-бы то ни́было = whithersoever

orcióna = hence

e.g. отстода до Москвы далеко = from here to Moscow it is far

оттуда = thence

e.g. оттуда до насъ инть вёрсть = it is five versts from there to us

```
откуда = whence
```

e.g. вы откуда? = where do you come from? откуда-то = somewhence

откуда-нибудь = somewhence

e.g. достаньте откуда-нибудь = get from somewhere (no matter where)

откуда-бы то нибыло = whencesoever.

Notice the following very idiomatic uses of rat and куда, e.g.

гдв мнв это сдвлать! = I shall never be able to do that!

гдв вамъ! = how can you think of it!

этогь городь куда больше того = this town is ever so much bigger than that

это вино коть куда́ = this wine is simply splendid

гдв..., гдв... = in one place..., in another...

Notice: Habepxý = up abore, sc. upstairs

внизу́ = down below, sc. downstairs

вверхъ = up(wards)

внизь = down(wards)

снаружи = outside, outwardly

внутри = inside, inwardly.

§ 72.

Adverbs of Time.

теперь = пою

тогда́ = then

всегда́ = always

когда́ = when

никогда́ = never

e. g. никогда не выъ мяса = I never eat meat

не́когда = there is no time to . . .

e. g. мнв теперь некогда! = I've no time for that now!

нъкогда = formerly, sometime

иногда́ = at times, sometimes

когда-то = formerly, a long time ago (sc. I don't remember exactly when)

e.g. онь когда-то быль женать = he was married once (sc. his wife is now dead or has disappeared)

когда-нибудь = some time

e.g. загляните къ намъ когда-нибудъ! = look us up some time or other

когласы то ни было = whenever uou like

= at first

сначала

& 73.

```
наконе́пъ
                               = at last
           yжé
                               = already
           нъть ещё )
                               = not yet
           ещё не
           vжé нъть, vжé не = no longer
e. g. eró ужо нъть здъсь = he is already gone, he is no longer here
     наконець
                       = at last
     ужо, потомъ
                        = later on
                        = soon, quickly
     скоро
     снова, опять
                        = again
     по-скорѣе
                       = as quickly as possible, hurry up!
                        = a long time
     ло́лго
     онъ долго не идёть = he is a long time in coming
     лавно
                        = long ago, long since
     давнимъ-давно
     сей-чась
     тотъ-чась
                        = immediately
     cio munyty
     третьяго дня
                      = the day before yesterday
     вчера
                        = yesterday
     сего́дня
                        = to-day
                         = to-morrow
     завтра
     послъ-завтра
                         = the day after to-morrow.
                   Adverbs of Manner.
                    = thus
             такъ
             какъ = how, as, like
             ника́къ ==(1) in no wise, by no means
        e.g. никакъ нъть = not at all
            никакъ нельзя = it is quite out of the question,
as an interrogative conjunction:
                      = (2) perhaps, as likely as not
         никакь онь придёть = perhaps he will come.
The following also is used more as an interrogative conjunction:
         нека́къ = I expect, as likely as not
         некакь вдугь - I think they're coming
```

некакь приходиль кто-то? = has any one been? какь-то = somehow, sort of, somehow or other

e.g. мев какъто не хочется = somehow or other (I can't explain why) I don't want to

это странно какъ-го = it's queer somehow

ка́къ-то can also mean for instance, and is used as an alternative for the expression какъ напримъ́ръ = as for example;

какъ-нибудь = somehow or other, by hook or by crook

e.g. устройте это какъ-нибудь = arrange this (matter) by some means or other

прівзжайте къ намъ какъ-нибудь летомъ = come and see us in the summer if you possibly can

это надо едилать какъ-нибудь = (ne) must do this somehow or other какъ-бы то нибыло = however that may be

иначе (or иначе) = otherwise, differently

это надо устроить иначе = this must be arranged differently

учись хорошенько, кначе тебя накажуть = learn your lesson well, otherwise they'll punish you

не такъ = differently, but very often sc. wrong (adv.); although there is a word for incorrectly, viz. неправильно, the most common way of saying wrong is не такъ, e. g.

вы не такъ сдѣлали = you have done it wrong онь не такъ поѣхаль = he has taken the wrong road вы не такъ сказали = you have said it wrong и не такъ по́няль его = I misunderstood him

though of course the same expression is often used to mean not thus literally.

Notice the very common adverbs:

вдругь = suddenly

постепенно) = gradually

мало-по-малу) = gradually

напрасно = in rain (often sc. it

is a pity that)

нарочно = on purpose

нечаянно = unintentionally

случайно = accidentally

особенно = especially

вообще in general именно = namely дъйствительно = actually, in very fact, indeed конечно = of course навърно = surely, certainly слъдовательно = consequently непремънно = without fail безпрестанно = incessantly

включительно = inclusively неключительно = exclusively безусловно = absolutely обыкнове́нно = usually
необыкнове́нно = unusually, unчрезвыча́йно commonly

and the idioms:

такь и сякь = this way and that
ни такь ни сякь = neither this way nor that
такь себь = so-so, fairly, middling
ничего́ = ,, ,, ,,
такь = gratis, for nothing, for fun
я это только такь сказать = I didn't mean it
такь точно = just so (often used by servants = yes)
точно такь = just like that

то́чно = (1) it is just as if

онъ точно въ неё влюблёнъ = one would think he was in lore with her

= (2) really, truly, exactly

у меня собака точно такая = I've got a dog just like that

ро́вно = exactly

ро́вно въ два часа́ = exactly at two o'clock. Cf. also § 70.

Note on the use of to after adverbs of place, time, and manner. It should be mentioned that to is often used enclitically after interrogative adverbs, not to express indefiniteness, but merely as an expletive, as much as to say, *I wonder*, e.g.

гд $\acute{\mathbf{b}}$ -то он $\acute{\mathbf{u}}$ тен $\acute{\mathbf{c}}$ ры ! = I wonder where they are now! когд $\acute{\mathbf{a}}$ -то мы увид $\acute{\mathbf{u}}$ мсн! = I wonder when we shall meet again! к $\acute{\mathbf{u}}$ к $\acute{\mathbf{u}}$ -то он $\acute{\mathbf{u}}$ устр $\acute{\mathbf{u}}$ то он $\acute{\mathbf{u}}$! = I wonder how he'll settle his affairs!

After definitive adverbs its use implies surprise, e.g.

теперь-то я понимаю! = now I understand!

такъ-то вы поняли меня! = is it thus that you understood me! (i. e. thought what I meant).

§ 74. Adverbs of Degree and Quantity.

мно́го = much немно́го dimin, немно́жко = little

e.g. дайте мив немного вина (gen.) = give me a little wine ещё немножко? = a little more?

```
это мало! = that's little (sc. too little)!
    STO MHOTO! = that's much (Sc. too much)!
    въ этой книгь мало хорошаго = in this book there's but little good
    у меня немного денегь = I have a little money (with emphasis
         on néherb)
    у меня немного ленегь)
    у меня денеть немного = I have but little money
    v меня мало ленегь
                    (with emphasis on Hemnoro)
   (for the declension of the plural mhórie, &c., cf. § 54, obs. 9)
сколько = as much, how much
    сколько это стонть? = how much does this cost?
    я помогаю ему, сколько могу = I help him as much as I can
crо́лько = so much
    онъ быль столько разъ у мени, что наконецъ онъ мив надоблъ =.
        he has been so many times to see me, that at last I've got sick of him
    сколько головь, столько умовь = so many heads, so many minds
то́лько = only
    не только = not only.
  Notice the idioms:
  да и то́лько T то́лько и всего́ = and that's all
  не хочу, да и только = I don't want to, and that's all about it
нисколько = not in the least (always with the negative repeated)
    я нисколько не хоч\dot{y} = I don't want to in the least
cко́лько-нибудь = at all
    если онъ сколько-нибудь порядочный человекь = if he is at all
         a decent fellow
Hbcколько = some, a few, somewhat
     нъсколько разъ = several times
               рубле́й = a few roubles
    у него нъсколько дътей = he has several children
     эта шляпа нъсколько дороже = this hat is rather dearer
ropáздо = ever so much
   это изпаніе горазпо дешевле = this edition is ever so much cheaper
довольно
            = enough, fairly
достаточно
    дово́льно де́негь = enough money
```

```
повольно холодно = it is fairly cold.
(N.B. not enough is usually expressed by мало, e.g. мало денегь =
      not enough money)
Continue = more
    у него больше книгь, чьмь у меня = he has more books than I
    бо́льше всего́ = most of all
    по-больше = a good lot, rather more
   . дайте мив по-больше (+gen.) = give me a good lot of...
ме́ньше (with gen.) = less
 . че́ньше всего́ = least of all
    по-ме́ньше (with gen.) = as little as possible
exopbe = rather (sc. sooner)
  . я скорве дамъ вамъ, чвиъ ем\acute{v} = I would rather give (lit. shall
         give) it to you than to him
слишкомъ } = too, excessively
черезчуръ [
   ' это слишкомъ много = that is too much
    это слишкомъ мало = that is too little
       (N.B. never with немного)
   слишкомъ = more than, above (lit. = with excess)
     ему слишкомъ сорокъ лъть = he is over fortu
очень = very, very much
весьма́ = very, quite
     она очень мила = she is reru nice
     H её о́чень люблю́ = I like her very much
   я о́чень хоч\circ = I want to very much
  у него очень {много } денегь = he has {a great deal of money
       (N.B. never with Hemhoro)
BOBCO HO = not in the least
     A BOBCE HE ROTÝ = I don't in the least want to
почти́ (что) = almost
     почти темно́ = it is nearly dark
     я почти что упаль = I nearly fell down
далеко не
             = far from, not nearly, not at all
     онь далеко не богатый человыкь = he is far from being a
```

я совсыть не понимаю = I don't understand at all

rich man

совся́мъ = quite
мнъ совся́мъ удо́бно = I'm quite comfortable
не совся́мъ = not quite
вполнъ, сполна, сплошь = entirely
едва́, е́ле, е́ле-е́ле, чуть, чуть-чу́ть = scarcely, with difficulty
онъ едва́ умѣ́етъ писа́ть = he scarcely knows how to write
она́ е́ле-е́ле хо́дить = she walks with the greatest difficulty
едва́ не, чуть не, чуть-чу́ть не = almost
меня́ едва́ не уби́ли = they almost killed me
она́ чуть-чу́ть не упа́ла = she very nearly fell down
(чуть-чуть alone means the tiniest bit)
по крайней мъ́ръ̀ = at least.

Note on the Degrees of Comparison of Adverbs.

The comparative of the adverb is exactly the same as the predicative comparative of the adjective, e.g.

Specifically adverbial forms are:

Notice:

болье или менье = more or less

ни болье ни менье = neither more nor less

and the superlative forms:

нанбо́ль́е = (the) most (adv.) наиме́нь́е = (the) least (adv.) всего́ мень́е = anything rather than.

Comparatives preceded by no- are commonly used adverbially, e.g.

по-выше = higher up (sc. a little higher)
по-ныже = lower down
по-дальше = further along
по-ближе = rather closer

and cf. p. 87.

PARTICLES AND CONJUNCTIONS

§ 75.

$$H = and$$
;

often used to emphasize the preceding word, or with the meaning just, moreover, e.g.

я такь и думаль! = I thought as much!

этого и недоставало = it was just this that was wanting (= this is the last straw)

въ томъ-то и дбло = that's just the point

и и говориль ему . . . = moreover I had told him . . . , followed by He = not in the least

I II II NOTATE = I didn't in the least want to, or what's more I didn't want to.

In some cases, when things are mentioned in couples, да = and, e. g. мужь да жена = husband and wife.

It is important to notice that expressions such as you and I are always introduced by $m_{ij} = we$, e.g.

мы съ ва́ми = you and I мы съ нимъ = he und I мы съ сестрой = my sister and I.

Any antithesis can be introduced by a, e.g.

онъ хочеть, а я не хоч $\dot{y} = he$ wants to, but I don't (or and I don't).

It can usually be rendered by the English but or while, but very often it begins a sentence and corresponds to our now or and; it takes the place of π (=and) whenever any antithesis is to be indicated.

$$\frac{\operatorname{Aa}}{\operatorname{Ho}} = but$$

this indicates stronger antithesis than a; still stronger are

однако однакоже = nevertheless всётаки = however, after all

-таки can be added as an enclitic to words in the sentence, e.g. онъ таки поставиль на своёмъ = he (sc. in spite of everything) would have his own way

и́ли = or

выдь = for, for you know that

usually used as an expostulation at the beginning of a sentence, e.g.

въдь вы знали, что я не хоч \circ = now look here, you knew that I didn't want to

BOTL = this is . . . , here is . . . , there is . . .

(like French voici, voilà). § 76. Questions and Answers (cf. § 49).

These are introduced either by some interrogative pronoun or adverb, or by the use of the interrogative particle . III, e. g.

```
кто вы? = who are you?
вы-ли это? = is this you?
дома-ли баринъ? = is the gentleman at home?
```

In ordinary conversation the -MH is often omitted, the question being indicated by raising the voice at the end of the sentence. Hto is often used at the beginning of a question instead of -MH, e. g.

что мы поъ́демъ? = shall we go?

This same question could be put in the following ways:

а что, мы повдемъ? повдемъ, что-ли?

If a negative answer is expected páзвѣ is very often used, e. g. páзвѣ вы зна́ете eró? = you don't know him, do you?

If an affirmative answer is expected, use развъ не, e.g. развъ вы меня не узнали? = didn't you recognize me? развъ вы не хотите? = do you mean to say you don't want to?

Incredulity and amazement are expressed by неуже́ли, е. g.

неуже́ли это правда! = can this possibly be true!

Doubt by врядъли

врядъ-ли это такъ = I doubt whether this is so.

 \cdot ли — и́ли — = whether — or —

я не знаю, у́мерь-ли и́ли нѣть = I don't know whether he is dead or not.

The affirmative answer is

 μ а = yes, and the negative μ ьть = no,

ut as often as not a question can be answered by repeating a word ontained in the question, e.g.

зна́ете-ли вы eró? — зна́ю — = do you know him? — yes, I do. до́ма-ли ба́рыня? — ло́ма = is the lady at home? — yes.

Other common expressions are:

коне́чно = of course emẽ-бы! = I should say so!

§ 77.

Negations.

In negative sentences the negative particle He always comes mmediately before the verb if the whole sentence is negatived, ut before any particular word if that word only is negatived, e.g.

и не люблю́ eró = I don't like him

я люблю́ не его́, а её = I like her, not him.

The object, when directly governed by the negative, is always in he genitive, e.g.

онъ не любить своей жены = he doesn't love his wife but cf. § 81).

If a sentence contains any negative pronoun, adverb, or the onjunction n - n - n - n, the negative particle n - n - n - n wo negatives in Russian do not make an affirmative, e. g.

никого не вижу = І сап вее по опе

ничего́ не хоч $\circ = I$ don't want anything

я никакь не ожидаль — = I didn't in the least expect —

There is not = Whith

vhich always requires the genitive, e.g.

нъть надожды = there is no hope дома никого нъть = there is nobody at home Is there not ? = нъть-ли? Ļ

§ 78. Subordinative Conjunctions.

```
чтобы
               = in order that
     чтобы не = lest
     éсли
               = if
     RTOX
               = although
     когда
               = when
     пока
               = while
             &c.
(for the use of these cf. §§ 102-5)
(какъ) будтол
            = as it were, as though;
яко-бы
```

these are very commonly used in reporting facts, incidents, or speeches of doubtful authenticity or credibility, e.g.

```
онъ какъ бу́дто не хо́четь = I fancy he doesn't want to онъ говори́тъ бу́дто не хо́четь = he makes out he doesn't want to она бу́дто-бы нездоро́ва = she is supposed to be unwell.
```

Other particles used colloquially are

which are all very commonly used by the people, but not much in society or literature.

The particle -ch is often affixed to the last word of any sentence, especially by servants and shopkeepers and subordinate officials when addressing employers, customers, or superiors, to indicate subservience; it is supposed to be an abbreviation of the words су́дарь = sir and сударыня = madam.

THE PREPOSITIONS AND THE USE OF THE CASES WITH AND WITHOUT PREPOSITIONS

§ 79. Alphabetical list of prepositions:

безъ (безо)	= without	Gen.
близь (близь)	= near	Gen.
вдоль	= down	Gen.
вивсто	= instead of	Gen.
внутри	= inside	Gen.

виъ	= outsids	Gen.
во́алѣ	= alongside	Gen.
вокругъ	= around	Gen.
вопреки	= against	Dat.
въ (во)	= in, into	Acc. Loc.
для	= for	Gen.
до	= up to	Gen.
за	= for, behind	Acc. Inst.
изъ	= out of	Gen.
изъ-за	= from out, from behind, because of	Gen.
изъ-подъ	= from under	Gen.
кро́мЪ	= besides, except	Gen.
круго́мъ	= around	Gen.
кь (ко)	= to	Dat.
между	= between	Gen. Inst.
MÍMO	= past	Gen.
на	= on, on to	Acc. Loc.
надъ (надо)	= above	Inst.
о (объ, обо)	= about, against	Acc. Loc.
о́коло	= around, about, near	Gen.
оть (ото)	= away from	Gen.
передъ (передо,		
предъ, предо)	= in front of	Acc. Inst.
no	= according to, along, till	Acc. Dat. Loc.
подлъ	= alongside of	Gen.
позади (позадь)	= behind	Gen.
посреди	= in the midst of	Gen.
послъ	= after	Gen.
подъ (подо)	= under	Acc. Inst.
при	= in the presence of, at, near	Loc.
про	= about	Acc.
противъ	= against	Gen.
ра́ди	= for the sake of	Gen.
сверхъ	= over	Gen.
сквозь	= through	Acc.
среди́	= in the midst of	Gen.
съ (со)	= with, from	Acc. Gen. Inst.
À	= at the house of, near, in the posses- sion of	Gen.
че́резъ, чрезъ	= through, across, over	Acc.
poor, Poor	- www. owyre, wor odd, over	

§ 80.

The Nominative.

The nominative is used, as in other languages, for the subject and the predicate of the sentence, e.g.

я твой оте́ць = I [am] thy father

though under certain conditions the predicate is in the instrumental, cf. § 84.

The nominative is used for the vocative, except in the three instances mentioned in § 39, e. g.

оте́цъ мой! = oh, my father!

3a + nom.

The nominative is always used after the preposition 3a = for in phrases such as:

что это за книта? = what book is that? what sort of a book is that? (lit. = what this for book). Cf. German: was ist das für ein Buch?

though when the nom. is the same as the acc. it is not apparent that it is the nom., e.g.

что это за помъ? = what house is that?

§ 81.

The Genitive.

The genitive is used to denote:

(1) Possession, e.g.

домь отца = the house of the father

though in this sense it is often replaced by the possessive adj., q.v.

- (2) Qualities, e. g.
 мальчикь хорошаго характера = a boy of good character
 человыкь пожилыхь лыть = a man of advanced years.
- (3) Partition, e. g. я хочу́ воды́ = I want (some) water хлъба, пожа́луйста! = (some) bread, please! кусо́къ и́яса = a piece of meat

often with the meaning of a lot after impersonal verbs: накопилось писемь = (a lot) of letters has accumulated.

(4) Quantity, e.g.

стака́нъ ча́ю = a glass of tea (tea in Russia is usually drunk

out of glasses)

фунть cáxapy = a pound of sugar масса людей = a mass (crowd) of people

after adverbs of quantity, e. g.

мно́го дѣто́й = many children ма́ло друзо́й = few friends немно́го (dim. немно́жко) мя́са = a little meat нѣсколько лѣть = some years

for the gen. in -y cf. § 39; for the other adverbs of quantity, and also for their adjectival forms and use, cf. § 74.

- (5) After the numerals 5-20, 25-30, 35-40, &c., cf. § 63.
- (6) Time in certain expressions:

сего́дня = to-day (lit. = of this day) пе́рваго ма́рта = on the first of March (= of the first).

(7) Comparison:

онъ слабъе меня = he [is] weaker than 1.

(8) The genitive is always used after certain verbs:

боя́ться опаса́ться } = to fear = to avoid

жела́ть = to wish (when an indefinite quantity is implied)

zorѣть = to desire (,, , , , ,)

пскáть = to seek просить = to beg

ждать дожида́тьсн $= to \ await, \ expect$

сто́нть = to cost (except in quotations of prices)

лишать = to deprive

касаться = to touch, concern

держаться = to keep to.

Examples:

я боюсь моря = I am afraid of the sea

хотите-ли вы вина = would you like some wine? but я хочу эту книгу (= acc.) = I want this book

жела́ю вамъ счастли́ваго пути́! = I wish you a good journey! (жела́ю вамъ) всего́ хоро́шаго (лу́чшаго)! (I wish you) everything good (best)! (A very common phrase on saying good-bye or ending a letter.)

я ищу́ кварти́ры = I am looking for a flat жду ва́шего прівзда = I am avaiting your arrival сто́ило его́ жи́зни = it cost his life (but in prices the nom. is used)

э́то каса́ется вась = this concerns you что каса́ется меня́ = as far as I am concerned

notice the idiom:

ми́лости про́симь! = please come and see us (lit. = we crave mercy, a very common form of general invitation).

(9) After certain adjectives in the shorter or attributive form: полонь = full вагонь полонь людей = the railway-carriage is full of people достойнь = worthy она достойна ero = she is worthy of him.

(10) In negative sentences the direct object is always in the genitive, e.g.

я не вижу вашего дома = I do not (= cannot) see your house онъ не слышить моего голоса = he does not hear my voice я не знаю вашей сестры = I don't know your sister.

One meets with apparent exceptions to this rule, when the object is not directly governed by the negative, but they are only apparent, e.g.

я не могу́ чита́ть э́ту кни́гу = I cannot read this book but

я не читаль этой книги = I have not read this book.

The genitive is also used after

нъть = there is not (il n'y a pas)

не бу́деть = there will not be

не́-было = there was not

у меня́ нѣть де́негь = I have no money (lit. = to me there is no money)

сего́дня не бу́деть представле́нія = to-day there will be no performance

не будеть дожди = there will be no rain

не́-было ничего́ = there was nothing

не́-было моро́за = there was no frost.

(11) The genitive is used instead of the accusative in the singular and plural of masculine nouns ending in -1, -1, -1, and

in the plural of feminine nouns ending in -a, -u when they denote things that are or were animate, e.g.

```
я вижу солдата = I see a soldier онъ знаеть цара = he knows the tsar я люблю собакь = I am fond of dogs
```

The old accusative which was the same as the nominative is used in a few phrases which became crystallized before the introduction of this use of the genitive. Cf. § 83.

```
(12) Notice the idioms:
```

```
до́ма = at home
ма́ло того́ что . . . = far from . . .
```

The genitive is used after the following prepositions:

6e3ъ = without

безъ меня́ = without me, in my absence безо всего́ = without anything

notice безъ того, чтобы не сказать вамь = without telling you

no = up to, till, before

μο τοιό = to that (sc. extent, = to such an extent)

до того времени = up to that time

до енхъ но́ръ = till now (ef. § 68)

до конца́ = up to the end (коне́ць = end)

до рождества Христова = before the birth of Christ

до вась = before your time, before your arrival

notice the idioms:

мнь не до этого = I have no time (or no inclination) for this (sc. now)

имъ не́ до насъ = they have nothing to do with us (sc. they don't bother themselves about us)

ло́-сыта = to one's full

изъ (изо before certain groups of consonants) = from out of, of я получить письмо изъ Москвы = I have received a letter from Moscow

онъ прівхаят изъ Англін = he has arrived from England изъ воды = from out of the water

изъ золота = of gold

изъ стекла = of glass

изо дия въ день = from day to day

it is always used in the phrase one of, e.g.

въ одно́мъ изъ больши́хъ домо́въ = in one of the big houses . . . the gen. alone cannot be used in such cases; notice the idiom:

The two following compound prepositions also take the genitive:

шзь-за = from behind, from beyond, from out of, on account of

изь-за границы = from beyond the frontier, sc. from abroad

изь-за этого = from out of this, sc. on account of, as a result

of this

нзъ-за мое́й болъ́зни = on account of, as a result of my illness изъ-подъ = from under

изъ-подъ стола́ = from under the table.

y = near, at the house of, in the possession of, from.

As the verb to have (numbers) is very seldom used in Russian, recourse has to be had to a paraphrase to express possession, temporary or permanent. This paraphrase consists of the preposition y followed by a noun or pronoun in the genitive and a part of the verb to be (быть); the part most commonly used is ects = is, il y a, though of course by determined be, il y aura, and but = was, il y avait, il y a eu are also very frequent. It remains to be said that the word ects is as often as not omitted, so that as a result the commonest way of saying in Russian:

I have	is	у меня
thou hast	,,	у тебя
he or she has	"	у него́, у нея
w e hav e	,,	у насъ
you have	"	у вась
they have	,,	у нихъ

The full forms, with ears added each time after the pronoun, are especially common in relating stories or whenever it is necessary to be particularly explicit, and in questions.

Examples:

- у меня есть отець и мать, и два брата = I have a father and a mother and two brothers
- у нихъ много денегь = they have a lot of money

у нась нъть дътей = we have no children (нъть is a contraction of не + есть)

есть у вась эта книга? = have you this book?

у меня́ на́сморкъ = I have a cold in the head

у него́ просту́да = he has a cold in the chest

notice the idioms:

у вась хоро́шій видь = you look well (lit. you have a good aspect)

у него плохо́й видь = he looks ill.

If the word in the nominative comes before the preposition y and the word governed by it, it regains its original meaning of near, e.g.

собака у меня = the dog is near me.

The distinction is very subtle and must be closely observed, as it is one way of expressing the difference between the definite and the indefinite articles, e.g.

у меня ог) у меня есть і собака = I have a dog

while

собака у меня = the dog is near me (not necessarily my dog), i. e. I have the dog, the dog is in my possession, or at my house.

Again,

у цари автомобиль = the tear has a motor-car

but

автомобиль у цари = the motor-car is at present in the tsar's possession, the tsar has the motor-car (probably not his own).

y of course often means at the house of, e.g.

они v нась = they [are] at our house

у насъ сегодня баль = [there is] a dance at our house to-day я объдаю сегодня у друзей = I am dining at the house of some friends to-day.

With the personal pronoun it also acquires the meaning of a possessive adjective, e.g.

у меня зубъ болить = my tooth aches, I have toothache

домъ у насъ горитъ = our house is burning

голова́ у ней болить = her head aches, she has a headache.

In exclamatory remarks it acquires, coupled with the personal pronoun, something of the nature of the ethic dative, e.g.

она у меня хорошая лошадь! = that's a fine horse! (sc. of mine)

ты у меня́ краса́вица! = thou art a beauty! (not ironically, sc. you are mine, you are beautiful, and I'm proud of you) она́ у вась умница! = she's a clever-boots! (sc. your little airl).

Curiously enough after certain verbs y can also mean from, e. g. онъ о́тняль у менй де́ньгн = he took away the money from me я взяль у него́ кни́гу = I took the (or a) book from him.

сь (co before certain groups of consonants) = from, since, from off

сь головы до ногь = from head to foot (lit. feet)

съ утра́ до ве́чера — from morning till evening

съ января́ = since January

съ пя́таго ма́я = from the 5th of May онъ упа́ть съ кры́ши = he fell from the roof

сколько съ васъ сни́ли? = how much did they take off you? (e.g. in shops, = the colloquial: how much did they

rook you?)

Cb меня́ сня́ли очень до́рого = they made me pay dear (lit. they took very dearly from me)

со дня́ на́ день = from day to day

со ску́кп = from tedium съ отча́янія = from despair

съ вашего позволенія = with your permission.

Notice phrases such as:

cpáзy (also съ-páзу) = at once

я сразу узнать его = I immediately recognized him

сно́ва = again

сы́знова = all over again

снача́ла = at first

which are compound adverbs formed by the preposition co with the genitive of nouns and adjectives.

oth (ore before certain groups of consonants) = from, away from

онъ у́яхаль оть нась = he has gone away from us (sc. left us) я получиль письмо́ оть брата = I have received a letter from (sc. my) brother

оть радости = from joy
оть скуки = from tedium
ото всего этого = from (as a result of) all this
онь умерь оть этого = he died from (of) this
. . . . оть двадцатаго мая = of the 20th of May

notice the idiom:

оть роду = from birth.

Phrases are common in which both orb and go are used:

отъ Петрогра́да до Москвы́ = from Petrograd to Moscow отъ нача́ла до конца́ = from beginning to end отъ вре́мени до вре́мени = from time to time.

There are a number of prepositions which take the genitive which were originally adverbs (some are still used as such), or cases of nouns with or without other prepositions, and having become crystallized are regularly used as prepositions:

6лизb = near

близъ Москвы́ = near Moscow

о́коло = around, about, near

о́коло Ло́ндона = (1) not far from London, (2) around London

о́коло двадцати́ лѣть = about 20 years

*круго́мъ *вокру́гъ = round, around

кругомъ города = round the town

подлѣ *возлѣ = alongside of

> во́злѣ меня́ = alongside of me по́длѣ рѣки́ = alongside the river

вдоль = the length of, down

вдоль у́лицы = down the street

BHB = outside

внъ комнаты = outside the room

*BHYTPH = inside

внутри комнаты = inside the room

```
BMECTO = instead of
           BMÉCTO TOTÓ = instead of that
      CBEDXP = over
                              = in addition to that
           сверхъ того
           сверхъ шубы
                              = over (his) fur coat
           (сверхесте́ственный = supernatural)
      среди (*посреди) = in the middle of
          среди улицы
                              = in the middle of the street
          (Средиземное море = the Mediterranean)
     *позапи = behind
          позади меня = behind me
     *nócab = after
          посль объда = after dinner
     *máno = past
          мимо дома = past the house (cf. мимоходомъ = in passing)
      для = for
          для́ чего́? = what for?
           онъ сдѣлаль это для меня = he did this for me
      кро́мъ = besides
           кромъ этого = besides this
           кро́мѣ того́ = besides that
      pan = for the sake of
           ра́ди Bora! = for God's sake
      противъ = against, opposite
           противъ непріятеля = against the enemy
           противъ холеры = against cholera
           противъ насъ
                              = (1) against us, (2) opposite us
      между = between (but more commonly with the inst.).
  Those marked with an asterisk can be used as adverbs as well.
  § 82. The Dative is used after a number of verbs without any
preposition:
      дать 
павать = to give
           я даль ей деньги = I gave her the money
           онъ далъ мив слово = he gave me [his] word
      върить = to believe
           я вамъ върю = I believe you (but N.B. въровать въ Бога
```

= to believe in God)

VЛИВЛЯТЬСЯ = to be astonished (at)

я удивляюсь этому = I am astonished at this ра́доваться = to rejoice (at)

мы радуемся вашему прівзду = we rejoice at your arrival кланяться = to greet (lit. = to bow to)

кланяюсь всымь = greetings to all

учиться = to learn

я учусь русскому языку = I am learning Russian cmвяться = to laugh (at)

чему́ вы смъстесь? = what are you laughing at? (N.B. to laugh at some one = c. Hagh + inst.)

MAINATE = to hinder

н вамъ не мѣшаю? = I am not in your way!

молиться = to pray to

молюсь Богу = I am praying to God

завиловать = to envy

завидую вамь = I envy you

жаловаться = to complain

онъ жалуется мив на вась = he complains to me of you грозить = to threaten

грозить намь быда = misfortune is threatening us

MCTHTh = to take rengeance on vчить (+acc. and dat.) = to teach

чему онъ васъ учить? = what is he teaching you? говорить, сказать = to tell

скажите мнb = tell me

полозжать = to imitate

напоминать, напомнить = to remind

напомните мив объ этомъ = remind me about this это мнв напомина́еть его = this reminds me of him

писать = to write (but also with къ, cf. p. 131)

я пишу ему письмо = I am writing him a letter подарить = to give, to present; купить = to buy, and others.

Also after impersonal verbs:

это мив правится = this pleases me, sc. I like this

MRB KÓYETCH = I want to

мнв пить хочется = I am thirsty (= I want to drink. There is no adjective thirsty in Russian)

```
кажется == it seems
```

MHB RÁMOTCH = it seems to me, sc. I think

мнъ не спится = I cannot sleep мнъ незлоровится = I am unwell.

Notice the curious expression:

онъ приходится мн \dot{b} (e.g.) дя́дей (inst.) = he is my (e.g.) uncle which is used to describe relationships usually of the remoter kind (N.B. приходится usually = one has to + inf.).

The dative is also used in the following common expressions:

 можно мнѣ?
 = may I?

 вамъ невозможно
 = you may not

 вамъ нельзи
 = you must not

пора́ намъ! = it is time for us (sc. to go) я радъ ва́шему прівзду = I am glad at your arrival.

After adverbs expressing pleasure, displeasure, heat, cold, &c., e.g.

уго́дно-ли вамъ? — would you like ?

 какъ вамъ уто́дно
 = just as you like

 мнѣ хо́лодно
 = I am cold

 мнѣ тепло́
 = I am warm

 мнѣ жа́рко
 = I am hot

мнь непріятно + inf. = it is unpleasant to me to

мн \mathfrak{b} жаль = 1 am sorry.

Also in expressing age:

сколько вамъ лътъ? = how old are you? (lit. = how many to you of years?)

мн $\mathfrak b$ два́дцать л $\mathfrak b$ т $\mathfrak b=1$ am twenty

and in a few expressions such as:

эта кни́га вамъ = this bock is for you это мнѣ = this is for me

цвий этимъ мвстамъ = the price of these places

онъ намъ сосвять = he is our neighbour

онъ мнв врагь = he is an enemy of mine

это не пришло мнв въ голову = it did not enter my head.

The dative is also used with the infinitive to express is to, has got to, e.g.

кому написать это письмо? = who is to write this letter? = this is not to be.

```
Notice the idioms:
      такъ себв = fairly
e.g.
      какъ это вамъ нравится? такъ себь! = how do you like that?
         80-80 !
      и тому полобное = and so on (abbr. и т. \pi. = &c.) (lit. and to
         that similar: sometimes also in plur.)
      домой = homewards, [to] home.
  The dative is used after the following prepositions:
    кь (ко before certain groups of consonants) = to
                                 = I have come to you
         я пришёль къ вамъ
         приходите къ намъ
                                 = come to us, sc. come and see us
         приходите ко миъ
                                 = come and see me
         у меня къ вамъ просьба = 1 have a favour to ask you
         къ вечеру
                                 = torcards evening
                                 = towards autumn, by the autumn
         къ осени
         кь началу октября
                                 = by the beginning of October
         кь концу ноября
                                 = by the end of November
         къ первому августа
                                 = by the first of August
         къ пяти часамъ
                                 = by five o'clock.
  Notice the idioms:
         кь сожальнію
                                = unfortunately, to my regret
         къ несчастію
                                = unfortunately
         къ моему удивлению
                                = to my surprise
         это вамъ къ лицу
                                = that suits you (of clothes), (lit. =
            to you to the face)
         къ монмъ ногамъ
                                = (he fell) at my feet
         лицомъ къ лицу
                                = face to face
         къ какой стати?
                                = to what purpose?
         кстати
                                = by the by, that reminds me.
     Bolipekú = against, in spite of
         вопреки приличіямъ = in defiance of decorum
     110 = along, over, according to
         по ўлицв
                                = along the street
         по-морю
                                = over the sea, by sea
         no-móemy or
```

по моему мивнію

= in my opinion

```
почему́? = why? (= on what grounds?)

(abb. п.т.ч.)

по прежнему = as formerly

по новому стилю | = according to old, new style
```

(in dating letters, the Russian (Julian) calendar being thirteen days behind ours (Gregorian); the abbreviations are: c.c., H.c.).

Notice the very common idioms:

```
по-тихо́ньку = quietly, on the sly
по-немно́жку }
ма́ло-по-ма́лу } = gradually, little by little
по жель́зной доро́ть = by rail
по слу́чаю + gen. = on the occasion of . .
по нево́ть = perforce
по мо́ей ча́сти = in my line, in my department (lit. part)
я уда́риль его́ по головь́ = I hit him on the head
я уда́риль его́ по плеча́мь = I hit him on the shoulders
по возвы́шеннымь цы́намь = at raised prices (sc. higher than usual).
```

also distributively:

```
по ночамъ = at night (sc. frequently)
по утрамъ = in the morning (sc. every morning)
по Воскресе́ніямъ = on Sundays, every Sunday
онъ далъ всёмъ намъ по я́блоку = he gave us all an apple each
по пяти́ рубле́й (dat. + gen. pl.) = at five roubles.
```

§ 83. The Accusative is used

 To denote the object of a transitive verb, e. g. я люблю свою родину = I love my country.

It has already been remarked that the acc. sing. and plur. of masculine nouns ending in -b, -b, and -n, and the acc. plur. of feminine nouns ending in -a, -n is the same in form as the gen. sing. and plur. in the case of animate, and the same as the nominative in the case of inanimate nouns.

The same rule applies to all adjectives and to all the pronouns except the personal pronouns and kTO = 10ho; in these the acc. is always the same as the gen., even the acc. of the neuter pronoun

onó = it being the same, not as the nom. but as the gen., viz. eró.

It must be observed, however, that this was not always so; the old acc. was invariably the same as the nom., and this is still to be seen in a few expressions which became crystallized before the gen. came to be used for the acc. in the case of animate things; such phrases, amongst others, are:

выйти замужь = to marry

(N.B. of the woman only; the phrase literally means to go out behind a man or a husband)

его произведи въ полковники = they have promoted him to be a colonel (lit. into the colonels)

SBATE BE TOOTH = to invite (lit. = to call into guests, sc. as quests)

поступить въ солдаты = to enlist.

(2) To express duration of time and distance:

эту зиму = this winter

цытое льто = the whole summer

прошлую осень = last autumn будущую весну́ = next spring одинъ годъ = (for) one year

круглый годь = the whole year round цѣлую недѣлю = (for) a whole week

мы прошла двъ версты (acc. + gen. sing., cf. § 61) = we have walked two versts.

(3) After the word жаль = pity, e.g.

мнѣ жаль вашу сестру = I um sorry for your sister

emý жаль eö = he is sorry for her мнъ его жаль = I am sorry for him.

The accusative is used after the following prepositions:

BL (Bo before certain groups of consonants) = into

я ћду въ Россію = I am travelling to Russia = I am travelling to London

вь Крымъ = to the Crimea

ОНЪ ВОШЕТЬ ВЪ КОМНАТУ = he came into the room.

Notice the following idiomatic uses:

въ понедъльникъ = on Mondau во вторникъ = on Tuesday въ день моего рожденія = on my birthday въ пва часа = at two o'clock = once a day разъ въ день два раза въ недълю = twice a week во что-бы то ни стало = cost what it may = costing two roubles въ два рубля вь рубль = at one rouble въ два этажа = two stories (high) въ тысячу разъ лучше = a thousand times better = in the old days въ старину во-время = in time во время + gen. = during (the time of) = it is the right size въ пору мив не въ пору = it doesn't fit me вамъ въ пору = it fits you въ гору = up-hill.(Cf. вверхъ = upwards виизъ = downwards.)

Notice the common expressions:

втеченіе + gen. (also written въ теченіе) = in the course of вслёдствіе этого (also въ с . . .) = as a result of this въ продолженіе цёлаго года = for a whole year.

3a = behind, beyond, for, by

я Ёду за грани́щу = I am going abroad (lit. beyond the frontier)

онъ ноёхаль за́-городь = he has gone out of town онъ взяль мена за́ руку = he took me by the hand садемь за столь = let us sit down to table en за́-иятьдесять лёть = she is more than 50.

Always after the following verbs:

 (по) благодари́ть
 = to thank

 купи́ть
 = to buy

and expressions such as praying for, fighting for, e.g.

я благодарю́ вась за ва́ше письмо́ = I thank you for your letter я купи́ль это за ру́бль = I bought this for a rouble онь мнѣ про́даль ло́шадь за пять соть рубло́й = he sold me a horse for 500 roubles

моли́тесь за мени́ = pray for me

жизнь за царя́ = (one's) life for the tsar

за Англича́нъ = for (вс. in favour of) the English.

Notice the idioms:

за кого вы меня принимаете? = whom do you take me for?

выходить за . . . = to marry

она вышла за нъмца = she married a German за кого́ она вышла? = whom did she marru?

For the phrase выйти замужь cf. p. 133.

Also in certain expressions of time and distance:

она умерла́ за́ два часа́ до ва́шего прів́зда = she died two hours before your arrival

мы живёмь за пять вёрсть оть станцін = we live five versts from the station

за парствование Александра второго = in the reign of Alexander II

3á AKTO = in the course of the summer (sc. when it is over).

Notice the idioms:

за хвость, за голову = by the tail, by the head за-руку, за-ногу = by the hand, by the leg or foot заодно́ = in concert with

380AHÓ = in concert with
38 TÓ = on the other hand.

11a = on to

положи́те кни́гу на cróль = put the book on the table

онъ дёгь на-бокъ = he lay down on his side

на колени = on to (one's) knees

на землю = on to the ground.

```
Notice the following idiomatic uses:
     на-ночь
                              = for the night
     онь прібхаль на ціялый міскць = he has come for a whole month
     дня на-лва
                              = for about two days
     на другой день
                              = (on) the next day
     на следующій разь (or) = for next time
     Há-ropy
                              = uv-hill
     на-берегъ моря
                              = to the seaside
     Ехать на Капка́зъ
                             = to travel to the Caucasus
     на-два рубля дороже
                             = dearer by two roubles
     на пятьдесять копъекь дешевле = cheaper by 50 kopeks
     на лицо
                             = present (sc. to be present), in cash
     на силу
                              = with great effort
     HÁ-HORO
                              = afresh
     Há-ckopo = quickly (sc. without taking much time or trouble)
     положиться) на кого
                             = to have confidence in any one
     налѣяться
     кущайте на здоровіе! = eat it to your health (a common phrase
       when showing hospitality)
     на светь
                             = to the North
                             = to the South
     на югь
    на востокъ
                             = to the East
    на запать
                             = to the West
    это похоже на васъ
                             = that is like you (of a portrait)
    это ни на что не похоже = that is not like anuthing (sc. un-
       utterably bad, abominable)
    на память
                             = from memory
    на-показъ
                             = for show
    на верхъ
                             = upstairs (sc. motion up)
    налѣво
                             = to the left
                             = to the right
    направо
    наконе́пъ
                             = at last
    напаўсть
                             = by heart (e.g. recitations, &c.)
o (before vowels observed{observed}) = about, against
    объ эту пору
                             = about this time
    я ушибся о столь
                             = I have hurt myself against the table
    я опёрся о коло́нну
                             = I leant against a column
    рука объ руку
                             = arm in arm
```

```
no = till
```

оть перваго (вс. числа) по тридцать-первое (вс. число) января = from Jan. 1st-31st

по колени въ воле

= up to the kness in the water.

Notice the idioms:

по ту сторону

= (over on) that side (of the river)

по правую руку по левую руку

= on the right-hand side = on the left-hand side.

For the use of no + acc. in expression of money values, cf. § 69.

подъ = under

положите эту подушку себь подъ-голову = put this pillow under your head

подъруку (взять кого) = to take some one by the arm

подъ-гору

= down-hill.

IIPO = concerning

про кого́ вы говорите? = about whom are you talking?

Notice the idiom:

про себя

= to oneself

они смъйлись про себя = they were laughing to themselves

(про себя)

= (aside).

сквозь = through

видно сквозь дымъ

= visible through the smoke

CKBOBL THEE through the forest, of anything that is visible through the trees of the forest

while Tépest AECE = through the forest, e.g. walking through the forest.

ch (co before certain groups of consonants) = about, like

онь сь меня (вс. ростомъ) = he is (as big) as me (вс. in growth)

сь непалю

= about a week.

черезь (or чрезь) = through, across, via, over

черевъ заборъ

= over the fence

черезъ воду

= through the water

черезъ воздухъ

= through the air

черезъ дъсъ

= through the forest

PÉPEZE PÉRY = across the river, or through the river (sc. motion across)

черезъ Неву

= across the Neva

черезъ Москву

= across, through, or via Moscow

че́резъ кого́? = through whom? (sc. by whose agency?).

In expressions of time:

че́резъ поль-часа = in half an hour's time

черезъ неделю

= in a week.

It also can mean every other:

черезь чась = in an hour's time, or every other hour черезъ день

= every other day.

The Instrumental.

§ 84. The instrumental case denotes primarily, as its name implies, the instrument or agent by which anything is done, e.g.

> писать карандаціомь = to write with a pencil

это письмо написано мной = this letter [was] written by me

руками

= with [one's] hands

йотон

= with [one's] foot, or leg.

It denotes manner:

парохо́домъ

= by steamer

я вду въ Россію пароходомъ = 1 am travelling to Russia by steamer

сухимъ путёмъ

= overland (lit. by dry way)

я поъду сухимъ путёмъ = I shall go overland

моремъ

= bu sea

ποπποπ стрѣло́й

= in a crowd = like an arrow

лѣсомъ

= by (sc. through) the forest

порожной

= by the path

полемъ

= by the field

наложеннымь платежёмь = pay on delivery.

Notice the idioms:

ъхать maront = to drive (or ride) at walking-pace, 'au pas'

илти пршкомр

= to go on foot.

and especially:

EXATE BEDXÓNE = to ride (sc. on horseback); BEDXE = top, and the phrase literally means to travel as the top (sc. the upper part).

The phrase кататься верхомь, lit. = to roll along as the top is also used; these two phrases are the only means of saying to ride in Russian. Notice also:

```
ря́домъ = side by side
rycько́мъ = in single file
таки́мъ путёмъ = in this way
```

какимъ образомъ? = in what manner, how?

какимъ способомъ? = by what means?

такимъ образомъ = in this (lit. such) manner, like that, and often means if you do this....

посре́дствомъ + gen. = by means of

какимъ or которымъ повздомъ? = by which or what train?

мѣста́ми = in places

большею частью= for the most partразомъ= all at once, all togetherоптомъ, гуртомъ= (sell by) wholesaleпъликомъ= wholly, completely, all

дицо́мъ къ лицу́= face to faceодни́мъ сло́вомъ= in one wordдруги́ми слова́ми= in other wordsего́ слова́ми= in his words

camó-cobóit = of its own accord, automatically

само собою разумъстся = cela se comprend

она́ хороша́ собо́й = she is good-looking (here the cofoit merely amplifies the sentence; if anything it emphasizes the compliment, but is really untranslatable in English)

во́лей-нево́лей = willy-nilly.

In certain expressions of the time of day and the seasons:

 весной
 = in the spring

 лѣтомъ
 = in the summer

 о́сенью
 = in the autumn

 зимой
 = in the winter

(when preceded by the demonstrative pronoun always use the acc., cf. § 83)

ýtpont = in the morning Bénopont = in the evening REEND - by day, and also very frequently = in the afternoon HOTED = by night.

- N.B. (1) this morning is сегодия утромъ (lit. = to-day in the morning)
- (2) this evening is сегодня вечеромь (lit. = to-day in the evening), similarly за́втра у́тромъ = to-morrow morning, &c.

It is used in expressions such as:

чыть богаты, тыть и рады = what we are rich in, to that you are welcome (lit. = with that we are glad, sc. that we will gladly give).

It denotes origin:

родомъ Англичанинъ = by birth an Englishman.

It is used in some expressions of measurement:

ръка шириной въ поль-версты = a river about half a verst wide (in width)

гора́ въ ты́сячу фу́товъ вышино́й = a hill 1000 feet in height

also глубиной = in depth.

In comparison of measures, e.g.

H ródone crápme eró = I am older than he by a year though these phrases are more commonly expressed by Ha + acc. (cf. § 83) or Bb + pasb (cf. §§ 65, 83)

THUS JYTHE = all the better
THUS HE MÉHBE = nevertheless
THUS GÓABE = all the more.

The instrumental is always used after certain verbs:

любоваться = to admire (but only literally to gaze at)
пользоваться
воспользоваться
= to take advantage of, to profit by

пользуюсь этимь случаемь $+\inf_{i=1} I$ am taking advantage of this occasion to . . .

гордиться = to be proud of

я горжусь вами = 1 am proud of you дорожить = to value highly

```
же́ртвовать 
поже́ртвовать } = to sacrifice
```

онь пожертвоваль всёмь своимь состояниемь = he sacrificed the whole of his fortune

владыть = to rule, command

Англія владбеть Индіей = England rules India онъ корошо владбеть русскимь языкомь = he has a good

command of the Russian language

командовать = to be in command over (troops, &c.)

руководить = to lead

управлять = to manage

онъ управляеть моймъ имъніемъ = he manages my property завъдывать = to look after

она зав'ядуеть домомь = she looks after the house править = to drive

онъ хорошо́ править лошадьми́ = he drives a carriage (lit. horses) very well.

дышать = to breathe

пахнуть = to smell (intrans.)

чвиь это пахнеть? = what does this smell of?

A very common and at first sight puzzling use of the instrumental is that called *predicative*. The predicate is put in the instrumental instead of in the nominative whenever any temporary or hypothetical condition is to be indicated, e.g.

когда́ я быль ма́льчикомъ = when I was a boy онь будеть великимъ человъкомъ = he is going to be a great man

лежание у него не было ни необходимостью ни случайностью = lying down was in his case neither a necessity nor an accident

послать заказнымь = to send . . . registered.

The predicative instrumental is used after the following verbs:

дѣлаться станови́ться } = to become

называться = to be called

BBBTh - to call

меня́ зовуть Ива́номъ = they call me Ivan, i.e. my name is Ivan

служить = to serve as

это служило мнв предлогомъ = this served me as an excuse считаться = to be considered

это счита́ется хоро́шимъ жа́лованіемъ = that is considered good pay

это считается нев'яжливымь = that is considered rude

елыть = to have the reputation

родиться = to be born казаться = to seem

дыло казалось серьёзнымы = the matter seemed serious

притворя́ться = to pretend to be.

The instrumental is used after the following prepositions:

3a = behind, for (to get something)

за границей = abroad (lit. = beyond the frontier)

за столомъ = at table

за об'ядомъ = at dinner

за-городомъ = out of town

я пришёть за деньгами = I have come for the money надо послать за докторомъ = (we) must send for the doctor

зачыть? = why? (sc. with what object?)

за т $\acute{\mathbf{h}}$ мъ чтобы + inf. = in order to . . .

затыть = after that, then.

It is always used of a woman being married (cf. 3a + acc., § 83):

она замужемъ = she is married

за кѣмъ она замужемъ? = to whom is she married?

между = between (also but less often with gen.)

между Петроградомъ и Москвой = between Petrograd and Moscow

между нами = between us (both of concrete objects and of emotions), amongst us

между прочимъ = amongst other things.

Notice the idioms:

между тыть = meanwhile, cependant.

надъ (надо before certain groups of consonants) = above надъ головой = above (my) head надо мной = above me (only literally)

```
передъ (передо before certain groups of consonants) = before,
        in front of
          передъ домомъ = in front of the house
          передо мной = in front of me
          передъ этимь = before this (temporal)
          переть объдомъ = before dinner
          передъ тъмъ какъ + inf. = before + verb (e.g. going).
      подъ (подо before certain groups of consonants) = under,
        near
          поль землёй = underground
          подо мной = under me
          подъ этимъ условіемъ = on this condition
          подъ какимъ предлогомъ? = under what pretext?
          полъ Москвой
                                   = near Moscow
          полъ Лондономъ
                                   = near London.
      съ (co before certain groups of consonants) = with
           co mhót = with me
           съ большимъ удовольствиемъ = with great pleasure
           сь наслажденіемъ = with relish
                           = icith difficulty
          сь трудомъ
                            = in course of time
          со временемъ
           съ къмъ вы говорили? = with whom were you talking?
           съ какой цѣлью?
                               = with what object?
           съ Богомъ!
                                 = good-bue! (lit. with God)
          Боть съ ними! = never mind them! (lit. God be with them).
  § 85. The Locative is only used with prepositions, hence it is
sometimes called the prepositional case.
  The locative is used with the following prepositions:—
      BL (Bo before certain groups of consonants) = in
          въ Москвѣ = іп Мовсом
          во мић
                      = in me
          во Францін = in France
          вь Крыму = in the Crimea (cf. § 39, Obs. 7)
          въ конић
                     = at the end
          въ началь = at the beginning
```

= in one's sleep or dreams.

во снъ

```
Notice the idioms:
```

въ конце-концовъ = at long last, finally въ самомъ дъяв = in very fact.

In certain expressions of time:

ВЪ СПЕДУЮЩЕМЪ ГОДУ́ = the following year

ВЪ ТАКО́МЪ-ТО ГОДУ́ = such and such a year

ВЪ Пе́рвомъ Часу́ = between 12 and 1

во второ́мъ Часу́ = between 1 and 2.

For other similar expressions, cf. § 68.

втайны = secretly впосиндствін = subsequently

вполнъ = completely, thoroughly.

Ha = on

на столь = on the table

на берегу моря = on the sea-shore, at the seaside

на боку́ = on (one's) side на со́днцъ́ = in the sun на дворъ́ = in the yard

(this is the commonest way of saying out of doors)

на льду́ = on the ice (fr. лёдь)

Ha mocrý = on the bridge

на службћ = in service (вс. Government service)

на небъ = in heaven, in the sky

на свыкомъ во́здухь = in the fresh air на свыть = in the world

на свобо́дѣ = at liberty.

Notice the idioms:

на своёмь въку = in one's time, in one's life

наяву́ = in reality (as opposed to in one's sleep)

на лошадахъ — by carriage, driving (lit. — on horses)

на-единъ = alone, in solitude.

It is used of men marrying, after the verb жениться = to marry: онь женился на русской = he married a Russian

HA KÓME OHE MOHÁTE? — to whom is he married?

Notice the compound adverb:

Hakahýhh = on the eve.

o (obt. before vowels and often before consonants also; of before certain groups of consonants) = concerning

обо м $H\dot{B} = about me$

o or объ чёмъ вы говорили? = what were you talking about?

обо всёмъ = about everything.

In certain expressions of number:

о двухъ концахъ = with two ends.

no = after

по прівздв = on or after arrival по нашемъ возвращенін = on our return.

Notice the idioms:

скучать по родинт = to be home-sick (for one's country)

по чёмъ? = at what price?

по чёмъ арийнъ? = how much a yard? cf. § 69.

при = in the presence of, in the time of, near

при мнб = in my presence, in my time, by me, near me, on me

ири двор $\dot{\mathbf{f}} = at$ court

при Екатеринъ Великой = in the time of Catherine the Great

при битв'в подъ Лейпцигомъ = at the battle of (lit. near, under) Leipzig.

Notice the idioms:

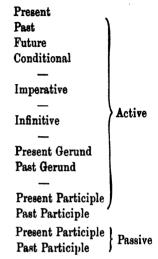
при чёмъ = in addition to which, besides which

при томъ = besides that

при всёмъ томъ = in addition to all that, in spite of all that при всёмъ моёмъ стара́нін = in spite of all my efforts.

THE VERB

§ 86. The Russian verb consists of the following parts:



The present is the only tense which has personal endings. The past is a tense only in name; in reality it is a participle whose endings vary not according to person, but according to number and gender. The future in form is exactly the same as the present. The conditional in form is exactly the same as the past. There is no subjunctive. There is no passive of any part of the verb except the participles, and if anything is expressed in the passive, it must be done by means of participles or of the reflexive verb (cf. § 110).

Use of the Personal Pronouns with the Verb.

The personal pronouns:

are used in Russian with the verbs very much as in English; in certain cases they are, however, omitted altogether, e.g. when the verb is used, as it frequently is, in an answer in reply to a question instead of π (= yes) or Herb (= no), e.g.:

Question: были-ли вы у нихъ вчера? = did you go to see them yesterday? (lit. were you at their house?)

Answer: быль = $I \ did \ (lit, I \ was)$

Question: будете-ли вы у него сегодня? = will you go to see him to-day?

Answer: буду = I shall

Question: можете-ли вы сдблать это для меня ? = can you do this

for me?

Answer: morý = I can.

The pronoun оно is comparatively rarely used; its place is often taken by это, e.g.

это было очень давно = it was a very long time ago or it is omitted altogether, e.g.

тепло́ сего́дия = it is warm to-day.

When it is used it often acquires the meaning of the thing we were referring to or what you were talking about, e.g.

оно́, коно́чно, непрія́тно = (a thing like) that (sc. which we were discussing) is, of course, unpleasant.

§ 87.

The Present.

REGULAR VERBS.

In Old Bulgarian the verbs are divided into five classes, and for etymological purposes Russian verbs can be similarly treated. For practical purposes, however, it is best to divide the verbs into only two classes, not according to the infinitive, but according to the endings of the present. The few irregular verbs which there are, which in Old Bulgarian form the fifth class, are in Russian not sufficiently numerous to form a class by themselves, but as they are very important they are given in full in a separate paragraph. For the regular verbs there are two sets of personal endings, which are added to the verb-stem sometimes directly,

sometimes with a vowel (-a-, -n-, -h-, -y-, -w-) or a consonant (-n-) inserted between stem and ending.

The first difficulty to be faced is the fact that though every present may be put in one class or the other, the infinitives are much more difficult to classify, because verbs having various infinitive endings have identical present endings, and others having identical infinitive endings have different present endings. In the lists of verbs given they are arranged alphabetically according to the last letter of the present stem as seen in the 2nd pers. sing., those ending in consonants + y first, those ending in vowels + 10 later.

Another difficulty is that the palatal qualities of the vowels in the personal endings have in many cases affected the last consonant of the stem, so that the present stem differs from the infinitive stem. The present endings of the two main classes of Russian verbs are the following:

Class I comprises all the verbs contained in the first three classes in Old Bulgarian; in that language the endings of class I were 2nd sing. -BIIM, 3rd sing. -BTL (-e/i, -et, cf. § 36), &c., of class II -HBIIM, -HBTL (-ne/i, -net), of class III -HBIIM, -HBTL (-je/i, -jet); in Russian these appear respectively as -je/, -jet, -nje/, -njet, and -je/, -jet, i.e. the 2nd and 3rd sing. and 1st and 2nd pl. all begin with -je (pron. -ye). Of the verbs which originally belonged to class I, those whose stems end in r or k change these letters to k and y before the palatal vowels of the endings -e/, -je/, &c., but retain the r and k before the -y of the 1st sing. and 3rd plur. The

² When unaccented these endings (3rd plur, of class II) are generally pronounced -ють (or -уть).

¹ When the accent falls on the personal ending the 2nd and 3rd sing. and 1st and 2nd pl. of class I are pronounced: -ëms (cf. § 14), -ërs, -ërs, -ëre.

stems of the verbs which insert -H- between the stem and the personal ending undergo no change. Of the verbs which originally belonged to class III, those whose stems end in vowels take the endings -w, -ehlb, -efb, -efb, -efb, those whose stems end in consonants changed them (except in the case of those in -H and of a few in -p) before the palatal vowels of the personal endings -ju, -jef, &c., in such a way as to absorb the y-sound contained in them, viz. final k, T of a stem becomes 4, or 111, final r, H, 3 become ж, and final c and x become 111, the personal endings appearing as -4y, -4ehlb, -жу, -жень, -ну, -нень, and -ну, -нень.

In class II the first person singular is often disguised as -y (i.e. apparently the same as in class I); the reason is that the - ω of the 1st sing. changes final κ and τ of the stem into τ or μ , final r, μ , and 3 into μ , and final c and x into μ . It also becomes y when the stem itself ends in τ , μ , or μ . Similarly the π of the 3rd plur. becomes a when the stem ends in τ , μ , or μ . In class II those stems which end in μ , μ , and μ insert μ before the - μ of the 1st sing.

Another difficulty which the beginner has to face is that of the prepositions in composition with the verbs. Verbs compounded with a preposition (i.e. preceded by it) are infinitely more numerous than those without, and this fact makes the beginner think at first sight that the language possesses an infinitely larger number of verbs than it really does. When reading Russian the beginner should always try and see the root or stem of each verb and cut off the preposition or prepositions which precede it. For this purpose it is important to learn the prepositions given in §§ 79-85, and also to compare them with those given in dealing with prepositions in composition with verbs. As the prepositions always have an especial effect on the meaning of each verb, only simple verbs have been given in the following lists, the alteration in meaning effected by the various prepositions being discussed later. Many of the verbs given in these lists are extremely uncommon, others not used in their simple form; the student should not attempt to learn the lists, but only use them for reference. The list of the verbs under class I contains all the difficult primary verbs which belong to this class; otherwise the lists given are very far from being exhaustive; they are merely intended to be representative. The verbs are arranged alphabetically according to the last letter of the present stem, those ending in a consonant + y first, those ending in a consonant + p next, and lastly those ending in a vowel + p. Only the 1st and 2nd persons sing, and the infinitive are given. In class I, whenever the 1st sing, ends in -y the 3rd pl. ends in -yrp, when the 1st sing, ends in -p the 3rd pl. ends in -pr. In both classes, on whichever syllable the accent is in the 2nd sing, that syllable retains it throughout. Those verbs preceded by a hyphen are only used in composition, and examples of them compounded with prepositions are given below. All those verbs marked with F are perfective and their presents always have future meaning, cf. § 101:

§ 88. CLASS I. Examples of presents: (Inf. nous) (Inf. идти ¹) $mor\dot{v} = I can$ $\mathbf{n}\mathbf{g}\mathbf{y} = \mathbf{I}$ am going (sc. on foot) можешь идёшь можеть идёть можемъ илёмъ можете илёто могуть ндуть (1nf. тянуть) (Inf. брать) 6epý = I take, I am taking $TЯН \dot{y} = I am pulling$ тя́нешь берёшь тянеть берёть тя́немъ берёмъ тя́нете берёте тя́нуть беруть (Inf. писать) (Inf. crath) $\mathbf{num\acute{y}} = I$ write, I am writing шлю $^{9} = I$ am sending пи́теть шлёшь пишеть шлёть пишемъ шлёмъ пишете шлёте пишуть шлють

Also spelt urra.

³ In the case of this verb the palatal quality of the personal endings has affected the c of the stem through the z.

(Inf. дълать)	(Inf. nats)
двлаю = I do, I am doing	$_{\text{IIbIO}} = I drink, I am drinking$
`дѣлаошь	n r emp
дѣлаетъ	пьёть
двлаемъ	пьёмъ
дѣлаете	пьёте
двлають	пьють

Thus are conjugated the presents of the following verbs and others:

Pr	esent.	Infinitive.	
·6+			
гребу́	гребёшь	грести	row
скребу́	скребёшь	скрести	scrape
-шибу́ ¹	-шибёнь F	-шибить	(hit)
• B +			
реву	ревёшь	ревѣть	roar
живу́	живёшь	жить	live
зов ў	аовёшь	звать	call
рву	рвёшь	рвать	tear
плыву́	плывёшь	атыга	float
слыву	слывёшь	слыть	be ç enown e d a s
-r+	$[\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{r} + (\mathbf{j})\mathbf{e}]$		
берегу́	бережёшь	бере́чь	keep
стерегу́	стережёшь	стере́чь	guard
жгу	жжёшь	агож	burn (trans.)
стригу́	стрижёшь	стричь	shear
лгу	лжёшь	лгать	prevaricate
Morý	можешь	мочь	be able
бъту́ (cf. § 89)		бѣжа́ть	run
ля́гу	ля́жешь Г	drer.	lie down
-прягу́ ²	-пряжёшь Г	ағадп.	(harness)
д+			
кладу́	кладёшь	класть	put
паду	падёшь	пасть	fall

¹ e.g. ушпбить = to bruise.
2 e.g. запричь = to harness.

	Present.	I	nfinitive.
краду́	крадёшь	красть	steal
веду	ведёшь	вести	lead ·
бреду́	бредёшь	брести	wander
жду	ждёшь	ждать	(a)wait
нду́	пдёшь	идти	go (sc. on foot)
бу́ду	бу́дешь	быть	be
блюду	блюдённь	блюсти	watch
ћду (cf. § 89)	Ъдешь	Ъхат ь	ride, drive
иряду́	прядёнь	прясть	spin
ся́ду	ся́дешь F	свсть	sit down
ж+ (=г,д,з+-ju)	(=г, д, з + -je-)		
-кажу́ ¹	-кажешь F	-каза́ть	(show)
мажу	мажешь	мазать	smear
бры́зжу ²	бры́зжещь	бры́згать	splash
лижу́	лижешь	лиза́ть	lick
гложу́	гложешь	глода́ть	gnaw
ржу	ржёшь	ржать	neigh
рѣжу	рѣжешь	рѣ́зать	cut
вяжу́	віжещь	вяза́ть	bind, knit
3+			
везу́	везёшь	везти	convey
ползу́	адиёскои	ÙTELOU	crawl
грызу	грызёнь	грызть	ynaw
กระงุ	лѣзешь	atedr.	clamber
к +	$(\mathbf{q} = \mathbf{k} + (j_i e)$		
влеку	влечёнь	влечь	draw
ucký	печёщь	печь	bake
теку	течёшь	течь	flow
толку́ _	толчёщь	толочь	knock
волоку́ ^в	ашёгогов	нолочь	drug
тку	тчёщь	ткать	10 e a v e
свкý	сваешь	свчь	cut, flog

¹ e.g. сказать = to say, показать = to show, but the reflexive казаться = to seem is used in the simple form.
2 Also брызгаю, &c.
3 Also волочу́, волочишь, волочить (class II).

Pi	esent.	1	nfinitive.
M +			
жму	жмёшь	жать	squeeze
-ниму́ ¹	-нимешь Г		
-иму́ ³	-имешь Г	-нять }	(take)
-ьмý ³	-ьмёшь F	-HTI-	
н+			•
стану	станешь F	стать	become, begin(intrans.)
гну	гнёшь	гнуть	bend
жиу	жнёшь	жать	reap
мну	мнёшь	мять	crush
стону́	стонень	стон а́ ть ⁴	gr o an
-11HY ⁵	-инёшь F	-math	(stretch)
-чну 6	-чиёшь Г	-чать	(begin)
двну	дѣ́нешь Г	дѣть	put
кляну́	клянёшь	клисть	curse
тянý	тя́нень	тяну́ть	pull
Verbs cont	oting a gradual	process:	
мёрзну	мёрзнешь	мёрзнуть	be frozen
мокну	мокнениь	мо́кнуть	be soaked
гасну	г а снешь	гаснуть	die down
ки́сну	киснешь	ки́енуть	grow sout
тихну	тихнениь	ти́хнуть	grow quiet
со́хну	со́хнешь	со́хнуть	grow dry
тону́	то́нещь	тонуть	drown (intrans.)
стыну	стынешь	стынуть	grow cold
Verbs connoting a single action:			
двину	двинець 🗜	двинуть	move (trans.)
кину	ки́нешь Г	ки́нуть	throw
крикну	крикнешь Г	крикнуть	cry out
тро́ну	тро́нешь Г	тро́нуть	touch
шешту́	шеннёшь F	шенну́ть	whisper

¹ e.g. обниму, обнимениь, обнить = to embrace. сниму, снимень, снять = to take off, to photograph.

² е. g. приму, примень, принять = to accept.

³ е. g. возьму, возьмень, взять = to take.

⁴ Also has present стонаю, стонаень.

⁵ e.g. распить = to crucify.

[•] e.g. начать = to begin (trans.).

Present.		Infinitive.	
p +	•		
вру	врёшь	врать	prevaricate
беру́	берёшь	брать	take
деру	дерёшь	драть	tear
жру́	жрёшь	жрать	devour
-мру 1	-мрёшь F	-мере́ть	(die)
-пру 2	-прёшь Г	-пере́ть	(press)
тру	трёшь	тере́ть	rub
-crpy *	-стрёшь F	-стере́ть	(stretch)
c+			
nacý	пасёшь	пасти	pasture
несу́	несёшь	нести	carry
трясу́	трясёшь	трясти	shake (trans.)
T+		_	, ,
плету́	плетёнь	плести	plait
metý	метёшь	мести́	sweep
гнету́	гнетёшь	rhectú	press, oppress
pacrý ⁴	растёшь	расти	grow (intrans.)
-4Ty ⁵	-чтёшь F	-честь	(read)
цвѣту́	аш ётё шь	цвѣсти́	blossom
-рѣтý ⁶	-рѣтёшь F	-рЪсти́	(obtain)
$\mathbf{q} + (= \mathbf{k}, \mathbf{T} + -\mathbf{j}\mathbf{u})$	$(= \kappa, \tau + -je-)$, ,
плачу	плачещь	шакать	weep
мечý	иечешь	метать	fling
хочý (cf. § 89)	хо́чешь	ататох	wish
ўРОХОХ	хохо́чешь	хохота́ть	laugh loud
шепчý	шеплешь	шепт а́т ь	whisper
топчý	то́пчешь	топтать	tread (trans.)
пря́чу	пря́чешь	прятать	hide (trans.)
$\mathbf{u} + (=\mathbf{c}, \mathbf{x} + \mathbf{j}\mathbf{u})$	(=c, x+je-)		
wamý 7	машешь	маха́ть	wave
пашу́	пащешь	пахать	plough
чешу *	че́щешь	чеса́ть	comb

e.g. запереть = to close.
Also spelt pocré, pocrëщь, &с.
e.g. пріобраста = to obtain.

e.g. умереть = to die.

e.g. простереть = to extend.

e.g. прочесть = to read through.

Also spelt 1

e.g. прочесть = to read through.

Also has махаю, махаещь.

Cf. the impersonal reflexive че́шется = it itches.

Pre	sent.	Inj	initive.
пишу	пұшешь	писать	write
пляшу́	пинешь	плясать	dance
$\mathbf{u} + (= \mathbf{c}\mathbf{k} + -j\mathbf{u}$ and $\mathbf{r} + -j\mathbf{u}$	(== ck + -je- and T + -je-)		
трепещу́	трепещеть	трепетать	tremble
ищу	ищешь	искать	look for
ропшу́	ропщешь	ропта́ть	murmur
л+			
колеблю	колеблешь	колебать	rock
мелю́ (cf. § 89)	ме́лешь	моло́ть	grind (corn)
стелю	сте́лешь	стлать	spread
вн емлю ¹	внемлешь	в нима́т ь	heed
дремлю́	дремлешь	дрема́ть	slumber
колю	ко́лешь	коло́ть	pierce
полю	по́лешь	полоть	unsti t ch
сыплю	сыплешь	сы́пать	scatter [.]
шлю (сf. р. 150)	шлёшь	слать	send
p+			
борюсь (cf. § 100)	борошься	боро́ться	struggl e
порю́	по́решь	иоро́ть	rake
a+			
даю́	даёшь	дава́ть	give
náio	ла́ешь	ла́ять	bark
дѣлаю	дъ́лаешь	дѣлать	do, make
знало	з на́ ешь	знать	know
-знаю́ ²	-з на ёшь	-знава́ть	(recognize)
играю	нгра́ешь	играть	play
TÁ,10	та́ешь	таять	thaw, melt
читаю	чита́ешь	чита́ть	read
-стаю́ ³	-стаёшь	-става́ть	(become)
-луч а ю ⁴	-луча́ошь	-луча́ть	(receive)
-	and very	many others.	

Also has present внимаю, &c.
 e.g. узнавать = to recognize.
 e.g. уставать = to grow tired, and numerous other compounds.
 e.g. получать = to receive.

Present.		Infinitive.	
i+			
rnió	гніёшь	гнить	rot
Bomió	вопіёшь	вопія́ть ¹	wail
0+			
вою	во́ешь	выть	howl
MÓIO	мо́ешь	мыть	wash (trans.)
HÓIO	но́ешь	ныть	ache
noió	поёшь	arðu	sing
póio	ро́ещь	рыть	dig
кро́ю	кро́ещь	крыть	cover
y +			
торгую	торгу́ешь	торговать	trade
жую	жуёшь	женать	c he w
кую́	куёщь	ковать	forge
сную́	снуёщь	снова́ть	weave
сýю	су́ешь	cobáti.	poke
совѣтую	совѣтуешь	совъ́товать	advise
танцую	танцу́ешь	танцовать	dance
чýю	чу́ещь	чу́ять	scent
ночу́ю	ночу́ешь	ночевать	pass the night
потчую .	потчуешь	потчевать	treat
(of which the	infinitive usually	ends in -провать	
апилодирую	ашилоди́руешь	анилодировать	applaud
формирую	фор мир у́ещь	формирова́ть	form
ь+			
быо	ดีเมียน	бить	hit
ВРЮ	вьёщь	вить	wind
лью	льёнь	athi.	pour
пъю	ашёап	нить.	drink
шью	шьёшь	ШИТЬ	sew
1 5 +			
вѣю	вѣ́ещь	• аткати	ıvaft
-дѣюсь ² (cf. § 10	0)-дѣ́ешься	-дѣятьея	(hope)

¹ Has alternative form воплю, вони́ть, вони́ть (class 11).
2 надѣюсь, надѣються, надѣяться = to hope.

Present	•	Infini	tire.
бѣлѣю	бѣлѣ́ещь	бълъть	show white
нмѣю	имъ́ешь	нить	have, possess
смѣю	смѣеіць	емтъть	dare
смѣю́сь (cf. § 100)	смѣёнњся	смѣя́ться	laugh
умѣю	умъ́ешь	умѣть	know how to
сп ъ́ю 1	спѣ́ешь	спъть	ripen ·
старѣ́ю	старѣ́ешь	старѣть	grow old
брѣ́ю ^e	брѣ́ешь	брить	shave
грѣю	грѣ́ешь	грѣть	ıcarın
зрѣю ⁸	зрѣ́ешь	зръть	ripen
c ž io	съ́ешь	свять	8010
-Thio ⁴	-твешь Г	-тkять	(plan)
ю+			
блюю́	блюёшь	блева́ть	vomit
клюю	клюёшь	клевать	peck
плюю	плюёнь	плевать	spit -
воюю	вою́ешь	воевать	make war
горю́ю	горю́енць	горева́ть	mourn
я+			
тая́ю	вая́енть	наять	sculpt
гуля́ю	гуля́ещь	гуля́ть	• walk
-виня́юсь ⁵ (cf. § 100)	-виня́ешься	-виня́ться	(excuse)

CLASS II.

(Inf. любить)	(Inf. ક մյլեть)	
люблю́ = I love	вижу $= I$ see	
любишь	видишь	
любить	ати <u>д</u> на	
любимъ	ви́димъ	
любите	видите	
атвооп	нідять	

Not to be confused with сною, спъть a compound of пъть.
 Also spelt брею, &c.
 Not to be confused with эрю, эръть (class II) = to see.
 затъю, &c. = to plan, contrive.
 извиняться = to excuse oneself.

(Inf. лежать)	(Inf. cuaть)
лежý = I lie, am lying	сплю
лежищь	спишь
лежить	спить
лежи́мъ	спимъ
лежите	спите
лежать	спятъ
(Inf. говори́ть)	(Inf. плати́ть)
$ robop 6 = \begin{cases} I speak, am speaking \\ I say, am saying \end{cases} $	плачу́ = І рау
говорищь	пла́тишь ¹
говорить	пла́тить ¹
говоримъ	пла́тимъ ¹
говори́те	пла́тите ¹
говоря́ть	пла́тять ¹
(Inf. учи́ть)	(Inf. слышать)
y ч $\acute{y} = I teach$	слыш $y = I hear$
учишь	слышищь
ýчить	слыщить
ýчимъ	слышинъ
ўчит е	слышите
ýчать	слышать

Thus are conjugated the presents of the following verbs and others:

Present.		Infinitive.	
6+			
люблю́ в+	любишь	любить	love
ловлю	ло́вишь	лови́ть	catch

¹ The accented a in all these five persons is usually pronounced like accented o in the case of this verb.

Data	sent.	Turk	Initive.
(r+becomes ж) (д+becomes ж in 1st pers.		110/	muive.
sing.)	д+		
лажу	ладищь	ла́дить	agree
глажу	гла́дишь	гла́дить	stroke
вижу	видищь	ви́дѣть	see .
сижý	сидишь	сидѣть	sit .
вожý	водищь	водить	lead
хожу́	ходишь	ходить	go (sc. on foot)
гожу́сь (cf. § 100)		год иться	be of use
горжу́сь (")	гордишься	гордиться	be proud
гляжý	гляди́шь	глядѣть	look
$\mathbf{x} + (= \mathbf{r} +)$			
лежý	лежишь	лежать	lie
дрожу́	дрожи́шь	дрожа́ть	tremble
держý	д е́ржиш ь	держа́ть	keep, hold
	бѣжи́щь (cf. § 89) бъжать	run
(s + becomes ж in 1st pers. sing.)	3+		
лажу	лазишь	ла́зить	cla mber
вожу́	возишь	возить	convey
(к + becomes ч) л +			
велю́	велищь	вельть	comma nd
болить	боля́ть (imper- sonal)	болѣть	ache
молю́сь (cf. § 100) молишься	молиться	pray
M+			
шумлю	шуми́шь	шумѣть	make a noise
н+			
виню	вини́шь	винить	blame
гоню	гонишь	гнать	chase
п+			
сплю	спишь	спать	sleep
терплю	т е́рп и шь	териять	endure
тороплюсь (cf. § 100)	торониныся	торопиться	hurry

Present.		Infinitive.		
p +			•	
говорю́	говори́піь	говори́ть	speak, say	
ropió	гори́шь	горъ́ть	burn (intrans.)	
смотрю́	смотришь	смотрѣть	look (at)	
курю́	ку́ришь	кури́ть	smoke	
(c + becomes ш				
in 1st pers. sing.)	c+			
кра́шу	кра́сишь	кра́сить	paint (sc. walls)	
вишу	висишь	висѣть	hang (intrans.)	
ношу́	носишь	носить	wear, carry	
(т + becomes ч or щ in 1st			,,	
pers. sing.)	т+			
плачу́	ила́тишь ¹	платить	pay	
лечý	лети́шь	летъть	fly	
верчу́	ве́ртишь	вертѣть	turn, twist	
блещу́	блести́шь	блестать	shine	
	хоти́мъ, &с. (cf. § 89)	хотъ́ть	ıvish	
пущу́	пустишь	пустить	allow, let go	
-сриў э	-сътишь Г	-сѣти́ть	(visit)	
(x + beomes III) $q + (= \kappa +)$				
кричý	кричи́шь	крича́ть	shout	
молчу́	ашѝчтом	молча́ть	be silent	
учý ^в	учинь	учи́ть	teach	
$\mathbf{m} + (= \mathbf{x} +)$				
стышу	слышшы	слышать	hear	
	and very r	nany others.		
0+				
бою́сь (cf. § 100)	бойщься	бояться	fear	
cróio	сто́ишь	сто́ить	cost, be worth	
croió	стойшь	стоя́ть	stand	

N.B. The a in all the persons of the present of this verb except the 1st sing. is usually pronounced like accented o.
 посьтить = to visit.
 The reflexive учиться = to learn.

§ 89.

Irregular Verbs.

These are not really irregular at all, but merely the remains of an old conjugation.

3rd sing.
$$ecrb = is$$

3rd plur. $eyrb = are$

are all that is left of the present of the verb fairs = to be (cf. §§ 81, 112).

ынт
$$= I$$
 eat, I am eating (Inf. herb) Sing. $\begin{cases} 1 & \text{hmт.} \\ 2 & \text{hmb.} \\ 3 & \text{herm.} \end{cases}$ Plur. $\begin{cases} 1 & \text{hgánt.} \\ 2 & \text{hgárt.} \end{cases}$

N.B. For the 2nd sing. and plur. kýmath is more often used.

дамъ = I shall give

[BENT = I know, obsolete except in the phrase Both Becth = God knows, still sometimes used; a part, the imperative sing., still survives in the very common conjunction BED = for, equivalent to the French donc or mais royons.]

The following two verbs are partly irregular, and as they are very common deserve special attention:

Ghrý =
$$I$$
 am runningхочý = I want, wish(Inf. бѣжа́ть)(Inf. хотѣть)Sing. $\begin{cases} 1 & 6 \text{ hrý} \\ 2 & 6 \text{ hrúппь} \\ 3 & 6 \text{ hrúпть} \end{cases}$ хочень хочетьPlur. $\begin{cases} 1 & 6 \text{ hrúпть} \\ 2 & 6 \text{ hrúпть} \end{cases}$ хоти́ть хоти́ть $3 & 6 \text{ hrúть} \end{cases}$ хоти́ть

and

The very common present

Sing.
$$\begin{cases} 1 & \text{figy} = I \text{ am going (sc. on horseback or in} \\ 2 & \text{figure} & \text{any form of conveyance but} \\ 3 & \text{figers} & \text{not on foot)} \end{cases}$$
Plur.
$$\begin{cases} 1 & \text{figers} \\ 2 & \text{figere} \\ 3 & \text{figers} \end{cases}$$

has an infinitive fxat.

моло́ть = to grind, pres. мелю́, ме́лешь, may also be classed as irregular.

§ 90. The Past.

As mentioned on p. 146 the past in Russian is a tense only in name. In reality it is a past participle active which formerly was used with the help of the present of the verb Ghith = to be, as a compound perfect tense like the German ich bin gewesen. When this present became obsolete the past participle came to be used alone as the past tense and is now not felt to be a participle at all. It is formed from the infinitive, the general rule being to cut off the last two letters (-Th or -TH) and substitute:

-ль for the masc. sing.
-ла ,, fem. sing.
-ло ,, neut. sing.
-ли ,, masc. fem. and neut. plur. all three persons.

In the singular it must always agree in gender with the subject of the sentence, whatever person it be, except, of course, that the neuter sing. in -no is only used for the 3rd pers. sing.

The personal pronouns must be prefixed as required, e.g. я, ты, онь, она, оно for the sing., according to gender, and мы, вы, они, онь for the plur., but they are often omitted.

There is absolutely no difficulty in forming the past from any verb the infinitive of which ends in

This includes all the verbs in class II and most of those in class I. The only difficulty is in the accent. This sometimes falls on the ending and sometimes not; it is best learnt by observation and practice.

Examples are given of the pasts of verbs in class II, and of those of class I whose infinitives end as indicated above:

1, 2, 3 Sing.	1, 2, 3 Plur.	Inf.
М. зналь F. знала N. знало	зна́ли	знать = $know$
М. сивя́лся F. сивя́лась N. сивя́лось	смѣя́лись	смъ́яться = laugh
М. видёль F. видёла N. видёло	ви́дѣли	видѣть = see
М. мыль F. мыла N. мыло	мыли	Muth = wash (trans.)
М. пиль F. пила N. пило	пи́ли	пить = drink
М. боро́лея F. боро́лась N. боро́лось	боро́лись	боро́ться = struggle

In the case of the verbs of class l, all those of which the infinitive ends in -ать, -ять, -ѣть, -ыть, ог -ить are formed in exactly the same way as those just mentioned, e.g. сталь, стала, стало, стали; быль, быль, быль, быль, быль, быль, быль, дёль, дёль, дёль, дёль, дёль, дёль, дёль, дёль, дёль, тиль, жиль, жиль, жиль, жиль, жиль, жиль, жиль, быль, from стать, дёть, быть, анд жить. In the case of the others, i.e. of those the stem of which ends in a consonant and the infinitive in -ти, -зти, -зть, -сти, -сть, -еть, -вчь, -ечь, -ччь, -ччь, -ччь, and those with infinitives in -нуть, the formation of the past is a little more difficult.

One reason is that the infinitive sometimes disguises the end of the stem, and it is to the stem (ending in a consonant) that the endings of the past have to be added, and another is that some of the stems undergo phonetic changes when followed by the -ms of the past. The stem can always be found in the 2nd sing. of the present by cutting off the personal endings -eith or -hemp.

Stems ending in -c, -3, -k, -r, -6, -p lose the -xz of the masculine singular past (those in -p being formed from the infinitive stem, e.g. from rep- and not from rp-), e.g.

		1 // 0	
M.	нёсь)		
F.	несла }	несли́	Hести́ = carry
N.	несло́)		
M.	вёзъ γ		
F.	везла }	везли	везти́ = convey
N.	везло)		
M.	тёкъ ү		
F.	текла }	текли́	Teчь = flow
N.	текло́)		
M.	могъ ј		
F.	могла́ }	могли	moqb = be able
N.	могло)		
M.	грёбъ /		
F.	гребла́ }	гребли́	грести = row
N.	грёбъ гребла́ гребло́		
M.	тёръ ү		
F.		тёрли	тере́ть $= rub$
N.	олдёт (
	-	_	

Stems ending in $-\pi$, $-\tau$ lose these consonants before all the endings beginning with π , e.g.

16			
M.	вель		
F.	вёль вела́ вело́	вели	Becth = lead
N.	вело)		
M.	иёлъ ү		
F.	мёлъ мела́ мело́	мели́	мести = вюеер
N.	мело́)		

Of the verbs whose infinitives end in -нуть, the majority form their past in the ordinary way. e.g. ¹

F.	тро́нуль тро́нула тро́нуло }	тро́нули	тро́нуть = touch
----	------------------------------------	----------	------------------

^{&#}x27; N.B. двинуть when compounded with the preposition, воз-, inserts again the r of its stem, viz. воздвигнуть = to erect, the past of which is воздвигь, воздвигла, &c.; but not when compounded with other prepositions. Исчезнуть = to disappear has both исчезь and исчезнуть.

but those verbs of this class which have so-called inchoative meaning, i.e. denote a process of any sort, lose the syllable-Hyand add the terminations direct to the real stem (after stems ending in -x, -c, -k, -3 the -xx falls off), e.g.¹

	Sing.	Plur.	Inf.
M. F. N.	сохъ сохла сохло	сохли	со́хнуть = become dry
M. F. N.	кисъ кисла кисло	ки́сли	ки́снуть = grow sour
M. F. N.	мокь мокла мокло	мо́кли	мо́кнуть = grow wet
M. F. N.	стыль стыла стыло	стыли	стынуть = grow cold

The pasts of the following verbs of class I must be mentioned individually, being somewhat unexpected; to them are added those of the irregular verbs:

	Sing.	Plur.	Inf.
M. F. N.	-чёль -чла́ -чло́	-члп	-vecth = $(read)$
	скль скла скло	с і́ли	chcть = sit down

¹ гибнуть = to perish, has an alternative form ги́нуть; the past of the first is either гибъ, ги́бла, ог ги́бнуль, &с., that of the second ги́нуль, &с., and in compounds, e.g. поги́бнуть, only поги́бъ, поги́бла, &с. Several other verbs of this category have both forms of past, but all have the shorter form as given above.

166		٠.	THE VE	KB	•
	Sing.		Plur.		Inf.
M. F. N.	росла́ }		росли́	расти	= grow
M. F. N.	кляль кляла́ кляло́		кля́ли	кіясті	b = curve
M. F. N.	лёгъ легла́ легло́		йктөк	- 4P9K	= lie down
M. F. N.	жёгъ		нстж	жечь	= burn (trans.)
M. F. N.			-ուշա	-111116	áть = (hit)
M. F. N.	åть)		įти	Ъсть	= cat
M. F. N.	даль дала́ дало́	•	дали	дать	= yive
	especially mean man man		шли	идти	= <i>y</i> o
	хотъ́ть	has	хотыть	хотѣла	хоткло
	бѣжа́ть	"	бѣжа́лъ	хотѣ́ли бѣжа́ла	бънало
	Ъ́хать	,,	hxаль	бъжали Бхала	ÉXA .10
	быть	,, ·	быль	была была	было
				были	

§ 91.

The Future.

The future in form is exactly the same as the present, and has no special endings of its own. It is a peculiarity of Russian that the present tenses of all the so-called perfective verbs have future meaning. This will be explained amply in §§ 101, 104.

The future can also be formed by using the form $6\cancel{y}$, $6\cancel{y}$ ems = I shall be, thou wilt be, &c. (of the verb $6\cancel{w}$ The = to be), together with the infinitive of any of the so-called imperfective verbs. The difference in meaning between these two forms of the future will be explained in § 104.

₹ 92.

The Conditional.

This is formed by adding the particle бы (often contracted to бъ) to the past of any verb.

This particle is really a part of the verb 6hth = to be, which originally possessed a complete conditional tense, long since quite obsolete. This particle 6h can be placed before or after the verb, the only rule being that as it is an enclitic it cannot begin a sentence, and therefore if placed before the verb the personal pronoun which is otherwise often omitted must be used. In meaning the conditional can be either past or future, according to the context.

Example:

хотыть-бы = I should have liked or I should like (inf. xorы = to wish).

The particle can either follow the verb thus:

	Sing.	Plur.
M.	хотвть-бы	
F.	хотвла-бы	хотын-бы
N.	хотъ́ло-бы	

all of which forms can of course be preceded by the requisite personal pronouns; or it can precede it, in which case the personal pronouns are essential:

Sing.		Plur.	
	л бы хоты́ль	мы	
M.	ты бы хотыль	вы 🔓 бы хотіли	
	онь бы хотыть	они)	

₹ 93.

The Imperative.

The endings of the imperative are:

The endings -n, -nre are added to the present stems of all those verbs in class I which end in a consonant and have the accent on the ending of the 1st sing. of the present, e.g.

If the accent is not on the ending of the 1st sing., then -L, -LTG are added, e.g.

If, however, the present stem ends in two consonants, then, although the accent be on the root, the endings -н, -нте are added. e.g.

¹ The very common reflexive берегись, берегитесь = take care!

² But N.B. сынлю, сынь, сыньте = scatter! and внемлю, внемли, внемлите = heed!

The endings -H. -HTE are added to all those present stems which end in a vowel, wherever the accent be, and as a diphthong is formed, the H appears as H, e.g.

Notice that the imperatives of the five verbs бить, вить, лить, инть, анd шить are somewhat different, viz.:

Similarly the verbs of class II take one or the other pair of endings according to where the accent is on the 1st sing. of the present. In the case of these verbs it is important to remember that the stem is to be found in the 2nd sing. of the present, and not always in the 1st, e.g.

The following imperatives are irregular:

from мігу міжешь, inf. лечь

from the thus, inf. ters (kymats is more often used)

from figy figeur, inf. fixate

N.B. An anomalous 1st plur. of the imperative is often formed colloquially by adding the ending -re on to the 1st plur. of the present, e.g.

(по)идёнте = let us go! поговори́нте = let's have a little chat!

though as a rule the 1st plur. of the present is used alone to express let us.

The 3rd sing. and 3rd plur. of the imperative is expressed by using the word πycκάπ (= 2nd sing. imperat. from πycκάπ = to let) or πycπь (= 2nd sing. imperat. from πycπάπь = to let), followed by the perfective present, e.g.

пускай придёть = let him come пускай стоять = let them stand пусть скажеть = let him tell.

For the use of the imperative in conditional clauses cf. § 106.

§ 94. The Infinitive.

The infinitive ends in -TD, -YD, -TH, or -YH, preceded by various vowels and consonants; when the accent rests on the infinitive ending itself (which it does in a small minority of all the Russian verbs) then the ending is -TH (-YH), otherwise it is -TD (-YH).

As examples of all possible varieties of infinitives have been given in § 87, it is unnecessary to repeat them here.

§ 95. The Gerund.

The present gerund is in most cases formed from the third person plural of the present by cutting off the last three letters, viz. -ють, -уть, ог -ять and adding -я, e.g.

неся́ = carrying from несу́ть
чита́я = reading " чита́ють
говоря́ = speaking " говоря́ть
садя = sitting " сидя́ть
сто́я = standing " сто́ять
гла́дя = looking " глада́ть.

The following are formed somewhat irregularly:

давая = giving from дають
-знавая = recognizing ,, -знають
-ставая = standing ,, -стають.

N.B. The present gerund from xoxirt = they wish has acquired the meaning although and is almost always used as a conjunction in this sense.

When the 3rd plural of the present ends in -уть or -ать preceded by ж, ч, ш, or щ then the present gerund ends not in -я, but in -а, е. g.

пла́ча = weepiny from пла́чуть **ний = seaking** ,, и́шуть мо́лча = being silent ,, молча́ть лёжа = lying down ,, лежа́ть

There is another form of the present gerund which is formed by cutting off the last two letters of the 3rd pl. present (-Tb) and adding -чи. This form is very commonly used by the peasants and in popular poetry, but in literature only a few verbs have it; from the verb быть = to be, it is, however, the only form of the gerund ever used, viz.:

бу́дучи, from бу́дуть.

The past gerund is formed from the masc. sing. of the past tense' by cutting off -ль and adding -вь ог -вши, е. g.

бывъ from быль
читывь ог , читывши , вль.

Those pasts which lose the -xb in the masc. sing. add -mu, e.g.

лёгши from лёгь нёсши " нёсь.

Those pasts in which a final -A. -T of the stem has fallen out before the -AB in the masc. sing. replace the dental and add -ME, e.g.

ведши from вёль (inf. вести́).

Notice especially:

ше́дии from шёль (inf. итти́).

¹ Used abverbially = in silence.

§ 96.

The Participles.

The present participle active is formed, like the present gerund, from the 3rd plural of the present tense by cutting off the last two letters -ть and adding -щій, -щая, -щее, which word is then declined exactly like хоро́шій, хоро́шая, хоро́ше, q. v.

E. g. from любять (inf. любить), pres. part. act. любящій = loving from ведуть (inf. вести), pres. part. ведущій = leading (sc. to) from знають (inf. знать), pres. part. знающій = knowing (sc. who knows).

It must be noticed that the participle, present in form, of the verb $6\acute{y}$ ду = I shall be, viz. $6\acute{y}$ дущій, has imperfective future meaning, and commonly means next, or the next; the neuter $6\acute{y}$ дущее is used substantivally = the future.

§ 97. The past participle active is formed, like the past gerund, from the masc. sing. of the past 'tense', by cutting off -ne and adding -built, -built, -built, -built, word is then declined exactly like xopómit.

E. g. from люби́ль (inf. люби́ть), past part. люби́вшій, &c. = having loved

from ыль (inf. ысть), past part. ывшій, &c. = having eaten from быль (inf. быть), past part. бывшій which is always used to express former or late (though, N.B., not the late, which is покойный). Those pasts which lose the -ль in the masc. sing. add -шій, -шал,

E. g. from умерь (inf. умереть), past part. умершій, &c. = having died, dead.

Those parts in which a final -A, -T of the stem has fallen out before the -AD in the masc sing. replace the dental and add -wih, &c.

E. g. from вёль (inf. весги́), past part. ве́дшій, &c. = having led from шёль (inf. итти́), past part. ше́дшій, &c. = having gone from паль (inf. пасть) there are two forms: па́дшій and па́вшій = having fallen.

§ 98. The present participle passive is formed from the 1st plur. of the present tense, the final -мь of which is turned into -мый, -мая, -мое, the word thus formed being declined like быми; е. g. from читаемь (inf. читать), pres. part. pass. читаемый, &с.; from видимь (inf. видеть), pres. part. pass. видимый, &с.; from любимь (inf. любить), pres. part. pass. любимый, &с. (= faccurite).

A few verbs of class I with stems ending in consonants form the present participle passive irregularly in -омый, &c.

E. g. from несёмъ (inf. нести), pres. part. pass. несомый, &с.

from ведёмъ (inf. вести́), pres. part. pass. ведемый, &c.

from искать = to seek, pres. part. pass. искомый, &c.

§ 99. The past participle passive is formed from the infinitive in two different ways. One is by cutting off the -TD of the infinitive and adding -HD, -HA, -HO for the short or predicative and -(H)HMH, -(H)HAA, -(H)HOE for the long or attributive form, which word is then declined like 65xHH.

E. g. from сдълать = to make

past part. pass. сділанть, -на, -но; -ны; сділанный, &с.

from потерять = to lose

past part. pass. поте́рянъ, -на, -но; -ны; поте́рянный, &с.

from дать = to give

past part. pass. данъ, дана, дано; даны; даный; даный, &с.

from осмотрыть = to inspect

past part. pass. осмотрънъ, -на, -но: -ны; осмотрънный, &с.

Verbs of Class II with inf. in -11Th form, the past part. pass. as follows:

from обвинить = to accuse

past part. pass. обвинёнъ, -на, -но ; -ны ; обвинённый, &с.

from ужа́лить = to sting

past part. pass. ужа́ленъ, -на, -но; -ны; ужа́ленный

from páhnth = to wound

past part. pass. ра́ненъ, -на, -но; -ны; ра́неный

from yuith = to teach

past part. pass. (short form not used) учёный (= learned, a savant).

The past participle passive of those verbs of class II, the 1st person sing. of the present of which is affected by the following palatal vowel (cf. § 87), is formed from the 1st person sing. of the present in the following way:

from заплатить = to pay

1st sing. pres. $3an\pi a \psi (\tau + \omega = \psi)$

past part. pass. заплаченный (pronounced заплоченный)

from садить = to set, plant

1st sing. pres. $camý (\pi + m = my)$

past part. pass. саженный

from crocuts = to mow

1st sing. pres. c c m y (c + w = m y)

past part. pass. скошенный

from купить = to buy

1st sing. pres. куплю

past part. pass. купленный.

Notice especially:

from обидьть = to offend

ра**s**t part. разв. обиженный, &с.

A few verbs of this class which have presents in -my form their past participles passive with m.

E. g. from oбратить = to turn

past part. pass. обращённый

from просвътить = to enlighten

past part. pass. просвѣщённый

from посвтить = to visit

past part. pass. посыщённый

and from otherate to avenge oneself

past part. pass. отомщённый.

Many verbs of class I whose stems end in a consonant form their past participles passive from the second person sing., cutting off the ending -ещь and adding -ёнъ, &c., for the predicative, -ёный, &c., for the attributive form.

E.g. from Becri = to lead

2nd sing. pres. ведённь раst part. pass. ведённь

ведённый прочесть = to read through

2nd sing. pres. прочтёшь past part. pass. прочтённы

прочтённый стричь = to shear, cut (hair)

2nd sing. pres. стрижёшь past part. pass. стриженный

жечь = to burn (trans.)

2nd sing. pres. жжённый раst part. pass. жжённый

and others.

The other way of forming the past participle passive is by cutting off the -5 of the infinitive and adding -5, -a, -o for the short or predicative, and -514, -as, -oe for the long or attributive form. This form is by far the less common of the two.

E.g. from mutb = to wash

past part. pass. мытый, &с.

from bath = to hit

past part. pass. битый, &c.

from проклясть = to curse

past part. pass. проклятый, &c.

from rphts = to heat

past part. pass. грътый, &с.

from терфть = to rub 😅

past part. pass. тёртый, &c.

from запереть = to shut (e.g. a building)

past part. pass. запертый, &с.

Other common verbs which form their past participles passive in this way are:

пача́ть = to begin

жать = to reap

нажить = to earn

мять = to crush одъть = to dress

занять = to occupy, to borrow

пѣть = to sing

 $\text{ нокрыть} = to cover \\
 \text{ нокрыть} = to press$

брить = to shave

and all verbs in -нуть,

e.g. from протянуть = to stretch forth past part. pass. протянутый, &c.

§ 100.

The Reflexive Verb.

• This is formed by the addition of -cn (or -ch), a reduced form of the reflexive pronoun ce6ú, to all parts of the verb, as follows:

купаться = to bathe (imperfective and intransitive).

Present.

я купаюсь

ты купа́ешься

онъ, она, оно купается

мы купа́емся

вы купаетесь

они, онъ купаются

Past.

М. купался

Sing. F. купалась Plur. купались

N. купалось)

Future.

булу купаться, &с.

Conditional.

купался-бы, &с.

Imperative. купайся купайтесь

Past Gerund.

Present Gerund. купаясь

Present Participle. купающійся. &с.

купавшись Past Participle. купавшійся, &с.

Cs is added whenever the part of the verb ends in a consonant or in ь or й; сь when it ends in a vowel. Ся is added in the participles throughout, whether preceded by vowel or consonant.

The uses of the Verb. **§ 10**1.

In order to use the verb correctly it is necessary to know not only the way it is conjugated but also what aspects it possesses.

This is where the real difficulty begins. It will have been noticed that, compared with other languages, Russian possesses very few tenses in the grammatical sense of the word; this want is supplied by the aspects.

The aspects are different forms of the same verb; the same verb acquires a different meaning according to its aspect. The aspects are formed by altering the verb itself either by prefixing some preposition or by lengthening or otherwise altering the root itself: the personal endings remain unaltered and each aspect of the verb has a more or less complete set of forms, i.e. present, imperative, infinitive, &c.

There are two main divisions of the aspects of the Russian verb:

imperfective

2. perfective.

The verbs themselves are called imperfective or perfective according to the aspect in which they are used in any particular 3 case, i.e. a verb is said to be imperfective, or is said to be used in the imperfective aspect, and every verb must necessarily belong

to one or the other division, i.e. must be either imperfective or perfective.

The difference in meaning between these two aspects is that when any one uses an imperfective verb the action described by that verb is in the mind's eye of the speaker INCOMPLETE, or, if in the past, must have been of uncertain duration.

When, on the other hand, any one uses a perfective verb, then the action is either COMPLETE or, if in the future, the speaker must have its completion in his mind's eye.

In English there is of course also variety of aspects, but it is expressed not by altering the verb itself but by the use of auxiliary verbs or adverbs; for instance, I go, I am going, I used to go, I often go, I was going are imperfective, whereas I went, I am gone, I shall go are perfective.

The majority of simple Russian verbs, i.e. those which are not compounded with any preposition, are imperfective, but from the fact that a given verb is compounded with a preposition it by no means follows that that verb is perfective. Nevertheless it is true that the commonest way of turning an imperfective into a perfective verb is by prefixing to it a preposition.

Now the curious thing is that when a preposition is used merely to make a perfective out of an imperfective verb, that preposition loses its original meaning.

Further, while there is always one preposition in particular which when prefixed to a verb both makes the verb perfective and loses its own original meaning, on the other hand, all the other prepositions when prefixed to the same verb both make it perfective and retain their original meaning, thus altering the meaning of the verb as well.

The difficulty is to know which is the particular preposition in each case which merely makes a given verb perfective, and as it is sometimes one preposition and sometimes another, the only thing for the beginner to do is to make a list of the commonest verbs and learn them by heart, putting down the simple (imperfective) verb and the form of the same verb compounded with that preposition which makes the verb perfective, while allowing the verb to retain its meaning but losing its own.

One of the prepositions most frequently used for transforming an imperfective into a perfective verb is no, which in the process

quite loses its meaning of along or over, and merely defines the space of time during which the action takes place, e.g.

смотрѣть (imperfective) = to look посмотрѣть (perfective) = to give a look.

It has already been indicated that not all simple verbs are imperfective and conversely that not all verbs compounded with prepositions are perfective; these categories of verbs will be examined later.

There tollow now paradigms of one or two very common verbs in couples, first the simple (imperfective) and then the compound (perfective) verb. It will be noticed that not both aspects of the same verb have an equally complete paradigm. This, as will be explained, is in the nature of things, and is invariably the case.

First the paradigms are given, then remarks on the use of the various parts of the two aspects:

$$\frac{\text{ділать}}{\text{сділать}}$$
 = to do, to make

Imperfective.		Perfective.
present	дѣлаю	—— (cf. § 102)
past	дъ́лаль	сдѣлаль
future	бу́ду дѣлаті.	сдѣлаю
conditional	дъ́лалъ-бы	сдѣлалъ-бы
imperative	дъ́лай	сдѣлай
infinitive	дѣлать	сдѣлать
pres. ger.	дълая	
past ger.	дѣлавъ	с дѣлавъ
pres. part. act.	дћлающій	
past part. act.	дѣлавинін	сдАлавшій
pres. part. pass.	дѣлаемый	•
past part. pass.	дѣланный	сдѣланный

 $^{^1 =} cь + д$ влать.

I	mperfective.	Perfective.
present	пишу́	—— (cf. § 102)
past	писаль	написаль
future	буду писать	напишу́
conditional	писа́лъ-бы	написа́лъ-бы
imperative	пиши́	напиши́
infinitive	писать	написа́ть
pres. ger.		
past ger.	писа́въ	наппса́въ
pres. part. act.	ทผ์การูกกุ้ลี	(Annual Annual A
past part. act.	писа́втій	написа́вшій
pres. part. pass.		
past part. pass.	пи́санный	написанный

§ 102. The Present (imperfective).

Russian possesses only one present, while English has two: π num \circ = (1) I write (sc. it is my custom or profession to write) and = (2) I am writing (sc. at this moment). Both these meanings are of course imperfective; when one says π num \circ = I write, or π num \circ = I am writing, the speaker does not naturally envisage the termination of his activity. An example of the use of the imperfective present:

что вы деляете? = what are you doing? я пищу письмо = I am writing a letter.

The imperfective present is frequently used in Russian illogically, instead of the future, as in English; e.g. in telegrams, letters, &c.:

прівзжаю завтра = I am arriving to-morrow (прівзжаю is an împerfective present).

The historic present is often used in narration instead of the past.

Use of the Present in subordinate sentences.

The imperfective present is used in all cases where it is used in English; after verbs of *declaring*, *feeling*, &c. The subordinate sentence is always introduced by 4TO, e.g.

я говорю́, что онъ врёть = I say that he is lying я ду́маю, что онъ лю́бить $e\ddot{u} = I$ think he loves her ты зна́ещь, что я теби́ лю́блю́ = thou knowest that I love thee.

In this connexion it should be noticed that after the verb выдёть the so-called paratactic construction is very common in Russian; this is especially frequent in narration. By omitting the что it gives the impression of two principal sentences instead of a principal and a subordinate sentence, e. g.

ВИДЯТЬ — ЛЕТИТЬ ИБ ИИМЪ ИТИЦА = they see a bird flying towards them (lit. they see — a bird is flying towards them).

Russian is much stricter in the correct expression of time, however, and the present is often used in Russian in subordinate sentences where in English we use the past although we mean the present, e. g.

I did not know that this was so = я не знать, что это такъ (lit. I did not know that this [is] so)

he told me that he was writing a book = онъ сказаль мив, что пишеть книгу (lit. = he told me that he is writing a book)

she thought he loved her = она думала, что онъ её любнтъ (lit. she thought he loves her)

and in these cases it would be a very bad mistake to use the past in the subordinate clause.

In conditional clauses the imperfective present is used whenever the condition refers to the actual present; the subordinate sentence is introduced by $\acute{e}_{CRR} = if$ (sometimes by \acute{e}_{RRR}), and the antithesis in the principal sentence is often expressed by the pronoun to used adverbially, e.g.

écan вы хотите, то скажите ему = if you wish, then tell him сдвайте это для ней, есан вы её любите = do this for her if you love her.

When the condition refers to the future the perfective present (= perfective future, q.v.) is usual, though in the cases of some

verbs the imperfective present is used illogically for the future, as in English, e.g.

если можете, то приходите завтра = if you can, then come to-morrow.

In concessive clauses the imperfective present is used as in English; the subordinate sentence is introduced by xorn = although (sometimes reduced to xorn), не смотри на то, что = in spite of the fact that, and the antithesis in the principal sentence is expressed by но = but, однако = nevertheless, всётаки = all the same, or by the enclitic таки = yet,

хоты всь говорить что это правда, я имь всётаки не въ́рю = although all say that this is true (the truth), all the same I don't believe them.

In relative clauses—whoever, in sentences where the present is necessary, is expressed by the simple relative, e.g.

кто говорить это, врёть = whoever says this, lies.

Whoever, whatever, and however are also expressed by the relative with the negative particle HH, which however does not make the sentence negative,

что онъ ни д'ялаеть, всё сму удаётся = whatever he does, he succeeds in everything

какъ вы ни старыстесь, вы не съумбете это сублать = however much you try you will not be able to do this.

If the relative sentence is negative the ordinary negative particle no is used and not un,

кто не знасть этого человька, тоть не можеть ноийть почему его такь уважають = whoever does not know this man, cannot understand why people respect him so.

In causal clauses the imperfective present is very common; the subordinate clause is introduced by нотому, что = because or такъ какъ = since (in letter-writing these are often abbreviated to п. т. ч. and т. к.),

она цилуеть его по тому, что она его любить = she kisses him because she lores him

такъ какъ вы не хотите сказать мив, я спрощу его = since you do not wish to tell me, I'll ask him.

In consecutive clauses the imperfective present is used as in English; the subordinate sentence is introduced by 4TO, e.g.

онъ такъ бо́ленъ, что я не могу́ его́ оста́вить = he is so ill that I cannot leave him.

In temporal clauses the subordinate sentences are introduced by когда́ = when (often answered by тогда́ = then), пока́ = while, между тыть какъ, въ то время какъ = while,

когда и пишу, я не люблю чтобы со мной говорили — when I write I don't like people to talk to me

сидите со мной пока я одъваюсь = sit with me while l am dressing.

In comparative clauses the subordinate sentence is introduced by kake = how answered by take, or take H = thus

какъ думаеть, такъ и говорить = as he thinks, thus (too) he speaks.

The Present (perfective).

It is one of the greatest peculiarities of the Russian verb that the formal present of every perfective verb has future meaning, so that while every perfective verb has a tense which is present in form, it is in meaning always a definite future (cf. § 104).

§ 108. The Past (imperfective).

This is the equivalent of the imperfect, and its use connotes that the action was more or less habitual or that the period of time during which it lasted is in the mind's eye of the speaker indefinite.

я писаль = I was writing, or I used to write.

Examples of the use of this tense:

что вы д'ялали когда я вошёль вь комнату? = what were you doing when I entered the room?

я писаль письмо = I was writing a letter

прежде она писала много = formerly she used to write a lot.

The use of the imperfective past in subordinate sentences is common in temporal, concessive, and comparative clauses, but presents no difficulties.

It is important to remember that in Russian the present is often used in a subordinate sentence where we use the past.

For the use of 6msano with the perfective present (= perfective future), cf. § 104.

The Past (perfective).

This is the equivalent of the acrist and its use connotes that the action is completed; it can never be used for any action that is habitual, frequentative, or indefinite:

я написаль = I wrote, or I have written, or I had written.

Examples of the use of this tense:

я сд $\hat{\mathbf{h}}$ лаль это нарочно = I did this on purpose

я написать твоему отну письмо = I have written your father a letter

что вы сдёлали? = what have you done?

There is one curious use of the perfective past which, owing to its prevalence and peculiarity, deserves special mention. The perfective past of any verb can be combined with the neuter singular of the past of 6hth, viz. 6hho, to convey the meaning that an action was on the point of being completed and was only just prevented; it is the Russian way of saying was on the point of, was just about to . . . , e.g.

онъ началь было приподниматься на постели чтобъ встать... = he was on the point of beginning to raise himself on the bed, in order to get up (when some one addressed him and he stopped where he was)

не дожидыясь отвыта онь ношёль было вонь = without waiting for an answer he was just going to leave the room (when he was stopped)

Алёша сталь было оть ликера отказываться = Alesha was about to refuse the liqueur

я было сказа́ль ему, а онъ уже́ поѣхаль = 1 was just going to tell him, but he had already gone.

Although this construction usually implies an unfulfilled intention it is sometimes used when the action was really accomplished, but was interrupted at the very moment of completion.

Another idiomatic construction with much the same meaning is чуть было не with the perfective past, e.g.

онъ чуть было не всталь съ постелн = he almost got up from the bed (sc. but didn't)

и чуть было не упакь = I very nearly fell.

This is in fact the usual way of saying nearly followed by a verb, as the adverb nearly (norm) is almost exclusively used with nouns and adjectives.

The use of the Imperfective Past where that of the Perfective Past is to be expected.

This is very common and for the foreigner immensely increases the difficulty of correct expression. It is most frequent in negative sentences; negation of an action seems to the Russian to demand an imperfective verb. E. g.

я не инсаль ему may mean: I was not writing to him; but it may also mean, and usually does: I have not written to him.

Very common phrases are:

вы мнъ давно не писали = you haven't written to me for a long time

я никогда́ не вида́ть eró (imperfective) = I have never seen him (N.B. In Russian two negatives do not make an affirmative) я не слыха́ла ей (imperfective) = I have not heard her (sc. never).

But where the negation refers to one particular event, the perfective may be used, e.g.

не я это сдълать = it was not I (who) did this я не узнать вась = I didn't recognize you.

In interrogative sentences also, where the question covers a long period of time, the imperfective is also frequently used (-ли is the interrogative particle):

писали-ли вы делали-ли вы когда-нибудь? = hare you ever written, done, seen, heard?

In general it may be said that in negative and interrogative sentences the imperfective is, in the nature of things, more usual than the perfective aspect.

A most unexpected use of the imperfective past is made in some cases where the action is quite definite and the most obvious aspect to use would seem to be the perfective. These are cases in which the speaker who uses the imperfective instead of the perfective aspect wishes by so doing to give a slightly indefinite tone to what he is saying; by using the imperfective instead of the

perfective he makes a suggestion, as it were, instead of a statement. To the beginner this seems a gross inconsistency, but it is really a very subtle refinement.

For example, one often hears Russians say:

онъ мнъ писаль объ этомъ

when one definite letter is referred to and the meaning can only be: he wrote to me about this, or he did write to me, &c.; in this case the use of the imperfective may connote hostility or ineredulity in the mind of the speaker, or it may be merely intentional vagueness.

Another very common instance is:

онъ говорить мив, что ... = he told me, that ...

where a perfective verb would be natural; in this case there is an English equivalent, for we often say: he was telling me when we mean he told me.

Here is an example from a letter of L. Tolstoi, where he uses two imperfective pasts while referring to two absolutely definite and instantaneous facts; the only conceivable reason can be that by using the imperfective he makes the item of news conveyed appear less important and thus makes less demand on the interest of his correspondent than if he had proclaimed the fact in the perfective. By using the imperfective he can leave the sentence unfinished without its appearing foolish, while if he had used the perfective his correspondent would have been led to expect some exciting news in the next sentence. This is the passage:

сейчась пріважать ко мив Ободенскій и привозиль письмо, только что полученное имъ оть брата Дмитрія . . .

Obolensky has just come to (see) me and has brought a letter just received by him from (his) brother Demetrius.

The use of the Perfective Past as an Imperative.

In the case of two verbs the perfective past is used as an imperative; these are:

```
пошла fr. inf. пойти = to go (on foot) and пошли пошли побхать, &c., fr. inf. пойхать : to go (sc. in any way except on foot)
```

It must be noticed that the verb of course agrees with the object addressed, e.g.

пошаа собака! = be gone, be off (addressing a dog).

The use of the Perfective Past in subordinate sentences.

The perfective past is used in subordinate sentences after verbs of declaring, &c., when the event really refers to the past, e. g.

я уже сказать вамъ, что написать письмо = I have already told you that I have written the letter

but it is important to remember that whenever the action is still going on, even though the principal sentence is in the perfective past, the verb in the subordinate sentence must be in the present or the future (cf. § 102).

я ему сказаль, что не люблю́ его́ = I told him that I didn't like him.

In relative, concessive, temporal, comparative, and consecutive clauses the imperfective and perfective past are of course both common, but its use presents no difficulties; the perfective past is common in temporal clauses beginning with as soon as (какъ только), before (прежде чъмъ, передъ тъмъ какъ), after (послъ того какъ), hardly — when — (только что — какъ —), as soon as ever (чуть), until (пока не):

какъ только прібхаль, я захвораль = as soon as I arrived, I fell ill онь сделаль это передъ темь, какъ я ему написаль = he did this before I had written to him

онь напнеаль это посль того, какъ получиль мое письмо = he wrote this after he had received my letter

только что я пришёль, какъ онъ умерь = hardly had I come, when he died

ты чуть вошёль, я вмигь узнала = thou hadst barely entered, I at once recognized [thee].

§ 104. The Future (imperfective).

The imperfective future presents no difficulties; it is a compound tense and is formed by 6%ду (= I shall be) and the imperfective infinitive. It is always used when any future action is referred to the completion of which is not envisaged by the speaker.

It must be remembered that it is only the imperfective infinitive which can be used after буду; to use a perfective infinitive after

буду is one of the worst mistakes a foreigner can make. An example of the tense is given in full:

я буду писать

ты будешь писать онь, она будеть писать

мы будемъ писать

вы будете писать

они, онв будуть писать

= I am going to write (sc. indefinitely).

An example of the use of the imperfective future:

что вы будете делать после завтрака? = what are you going to do after lunch (= in the afternoon)?

я буду писать, читать = I am going to write, read

вы будете писать мив? = you will write to me? (sc. more than once) $6 \dot{\mathbf{v}}_{A} \mathbf{v} = I \ will.$

Стану, станешь, &c. (from стать = to become, to take up one's stand), is also used followed by an imperfective infinitive to form this same tense, instead of 64xy, but it is much commoner in the written than in the spoken language. It is particularly common in negative sentences.

The use of the imperfective future in subordinate sentences does not present any difficulties, but cf. § 102.

The Future (perfective).

This is in form exactly the same as the present, and is in theory the present tense of the perfective aspect, while in fact it always has future meaning. It is used when the completion of any future action is contemplated by the speaker. The use of this tense is at first the most puzzling for the beginner.

Examples:

я напишу ему теперь = I shall write to him now н сделаю это завтра = I shall do this to-morrow.

The imperfective present and the perfective future can of course be used together, e.g.

я посмотрю, что онь тамь пылаеть = I shall have a look, what he is doing there while

A CHOTPÉ, Tró ORL ABABETL = I am watching, what he is doing.

There is one use of the perfective future which is very idiomatic and requires special notice. The perfective future of any verb can be combined with the neuter singular of the past of бывать (the imperfective frequentative form of быть = to be), viz. бывало, to convey the idea of a perfective or definite action which used to take place often or customarily in the past:

зайдёть она бывало ко мнв чай шить = she used often to look in on me to have tea (зайдёть = she will look in on, perfective)

онь бывало скажеть мив: 'Принеси стакань воды' = he would often say to me: 'Bring me a glass of water.'

Бывало can also be used with the imperfective present to express an imperfective habitual action in the past, but this construction is not so common.

The perfective future is also used in narration like a historic-present, e.g.

Татьяна то вздохнёть, то охнеть = at one moment Tatyana would sigh, at another she would groan.

It can also be used, illogically, in certain cases where one would expect the imperfective present, e.g.

не разберу́ ничего, всё вздоръ = I can't make out a word, it's all nonsense (lit. I shall not be able to make out).

Use of the Future in subordinate clauses.

The future is often used in Russian in subordinate sentences, where in English we use the past or the verb would, should, e.g. after verbs of declaring, &c.:

He said that he would be there, or that he was going to be there = онь сказать, что будеть тамь (lit. = he said that he will be there)

I knew that he would do this, or that he was going to do this = я зналь, что онь это сдълаеть (= I knew that he will do this)

She did not know that I was going to write = она́ не знала, что я нашишу́ &c.

In relative clauses the perfective future is used after kto hu = whoever, что ни = whatever:

что вы ни скажете, я намъ не повърю = whatever you may say,
I shall not believe you.

The use of the perfective future is especially common in temporal clauses with the meaning of the future perfect where we in English illogically use the present, e.g.

напишите, какъ только прівдете = write as soon as you arrive (lit. shall arrive)

подумайте хорошенько, передъ тыть какъ сділаете это = reflect well before you do this (lit. will do)

скажемъ вамъ всё послъ того, какъ вернёмся = we shall tell you everything after we return (lit. shall return).

N.B. kakh is often used alone with the meaning when. Until is usually expressed by noká ne, though ne is sometimes omitted, e.g.

я не напишу, пока не получу оть него письмо = I shall not write, until I have a letter from him.

The perfective future is often used in conditional clauses where we use the present illogically:

éсли онъ сділасть это, и закричу = if he does this (lit. will do) I shall scream.

§ 105. The Conditional (imperfective and perfective).

The conditional, as already explained in § 92, is not a separate tense in form, but is merely compounded of the past and the particle 6M. It can be formed from the imperfective as well as from the perfective past, but it is far more commonly formed from the latter.

The peculiarity of the tense from the syntactical point of view is that it can refer to the future as well as to the past, e.g.

я бы сделать = I should have done, or I should do

что вы бы написали? = what would you have written? or what would you write?

это было-бы невозможно = that would have been impossible, or that would be impossible.

Other uses of the Conditional.

The conditional is very common in relative sentences beginning with whoever, whatever, expressed in Russian by the relative pronouns kto uto, followed by the 6m of the conditional and the negative particle HH:

кто бы это ни написать, я ему скажу . . = whoerer wrote this, I shall tell him

что бы вы ни сділали, ничего но поможеть = whatever you do, nothing will help

что бы это ни стоило, надо это сдёлать = whatever it cost, we must do this

что бы ни случилось, повдемъ = whatever happens, we shall go.

The conditional is used in unfulfilled conditional sentences, both in the principal and in the subordinate sentences; in the latter it is joined to the word éche (=if) and is usually reduced to 6b, e.g.

я бы сдылать это, еслибы могь = I should have done this if I had been able

écanote oná xorka, ona бы написала = if she had wished (to), she would have written.

But it must be carefully observed that if the condition is still capable of fulfilment either in the present or the past, these tenses are used in Russian and not the conditional, e.g.

если можете, наиншите теперь = if you can, write now

я буду очень радь, если вы сдылаете это = I should be very glad if you did this (lit. = I shall be very glad if you will do this).

The conditional is used in final clauses where the subject of the subordinate is not the same as that of the principal sentence; 6M is always joined to the conjunction To which introduces the subordinate sentence, e.g.

я иншу́ ему́, чтобы онъ узналь правду = I am writing to him in order that he may learn the truth

онь дыя́сть это, чтобы мы замѣтили его́ = he is doing this in order that we may notice him

она помогла ему, чтобы онъ потомъ помогъ ей = she helped him in order that he might later help her.

The conditional is used in concessive clauses if the sense is hypothetical, e.g.

хотя-бы зналь, что вы тамъ, я бы не могь придти = even though

1 had known you were there I should not have been able to come.

The conditional is used after all verbs of wishing, commanding, and praying, both affirmative and negative; the subordinate sentences are introduced by чтобы от чтобы, e.g.

s xouy, whose one sto exchange I wish him to do this (lit. I wish that he would do this)

она хочеть, чтобъ я ей написаль = she wishes me to write to her (... чтобъ я ей писаль would mean to write more than once, often)

онъ приказаль, чтобы вы пошли кь нему = he ordered you to go to him

она просила, чтобы мы это сдилали = she begged us to do this.

The conditional is often used after verbs of declaring, feeling, and believing when the verb in the principal sentence is negatived; the subordinate sentence is introduced by чтобы от чтобы, е. g.

я не говорю, чтобы это было такъ = I do not say, that this is so

я не думаю, чтобы онъ это сд $\dot{\mathbf{h}}$ лаль = I do not think that he did it

я не върю, чтобы было опасно = I don't believe that it is dangerous

когда я пишу, я не люблю чтобы со мной говорили = when I write I don't like people to talk to me.

In conversation, however, the present and past are often used instead of the conditional, and when the subordinate sentence refers to the future, then the future only is used, e.g.

я не думаю, что будеть холодно = I don't think that it will be cold.

The conditional, negatived, is often used after verbs of fearing (бояться) expressing a positive fear; the subordinate sentence is introduced by чтобы ог какъ-бы, e.g.

- я боюсь, чтобы вы не простудились = I am afraid that you will eatch cold
- я боюсь, какъ-бы онъ не узнать = I am afraid he will find out though что follow. I by the perfective future can also be used in such cases, and must be if the fear is negative, e.g.
 - я боюсь, что оны мив не напишеть = I am afraid that he will not write me.

The conditional is also used invariably after certain negative expressions, e.g.

невозможно, чтобы это было правда — it is impossible that this is true (lit. the truth)

невъроятно, чтобы онъ написаль мив = it is improbable that he would write me, or that he will write.

The particle on is sometimes used by itself in certain expressions elliptically, e.g.

воть-бы хорошо́! = there, wouldn't that be nice!

For the use of 6ы with the infinitive cf. § 107.

§ 106. The Imperative (imperfective and perfective).

The imperative is used in Russian as in English. The difference between the imperfective and the perfective imperative is that the former implies a command of a more general nature, while the latter refers to the immediate present, e.g.

```
смотри́, смотри́те! = look out (sc. take care)!
посмотри́, посмотри́те! = look here!
слу́шайте меня́! (inf. слу́шать) = listen to me (sc. take my advice)!
послу́шайте! (inf. послу́шать) = listen!
```

Very often the imperfective imperative is used when it is a question of polite request rather than of a peremptory command; this is especially so in the case of the verb to give, inf. давать (imperfective), and дать (perfective), e.g.

давайте мий что-нибудь побсть $!=gire\ me\ something\ to\ eat$ more polite than

дайте, though the latter is often used.

The same holds good of the verb to hand, to serve, inf. подавать (imperfective), подать (perfective), e.g.

подавай(те) oбъть! = serve the dinner!.

is more polite than

подай(те) мнъ счёть! = give (lit. hand) me the bill!

The imperatives of the verb to allow, to let, inf. hyckárh (imperfective), hycrárh (perfective), followed by the 3rd sing. of the perfective future, are used to express the 3rd sing. of the imperative (cf. § 93), e.g.

```
пусть от пускай скажеть вамь = let him tell you пускай сдылаеть = let him do it пусть напишеть = let him write.
```

The imperative gasaff(re) is very commonly used colloquially with the meaning let's, e.g.

давай (те) играть въ карты! = let's have a game of cards!

to which the answer usually is:

дава́й(те) = [yes] let's!

The imperative дай (те) is often used with the meaning let, e.g. дай (те) мнь говорить! = let me speak.

In prohibitions the imperfective is used, e.g.

не давайте ей говорить! = don't let her speak.

In negative commands the imperfective imperative is almost nvariably used, even when the prohibition only covers a definite act or period of time, e.g.

пе пишите emý! = don't write to him! (= either now, or in future)

не смотрите! = don't look!

не говорите ему ! = don't tell him!

не говорите! = don't talk about it!

for the use of the infinitive in commands cf. § 107).

An exception is the verb

to forget, inf. забывать (imperfective), забыть (perfective)

of both of which the imperative is quite common, e.g.

не забывайте меня! = don't forget me

put не забудьте что н вамъ сказаль! = don't forget what I told you! не забудьте! = don't forget!

не забудьте написать мнв! = don't forget to write to me!

cf. незабудка = forget-me-not).

Use of the Imperative in conditional sentences.

The imperative is frequently used in Russian in unfulfilled conlitional sentences; in this construction the imperative can be combined with any noun or pronoun, e. g.

будь этоть домь дешевле, я бы купиль eró = if this house had been cheaper, I should have bought it (lit. = be this house cheaper).

In this construction the perfective imperative is always used in spite of the negative:

не случись тамь лодка, я бы утонуль = if a boat hadn't happened [to be] there, I should have been drowned

но сдылай онъ этого, она бы пришла = if he had not done this, she would have come

скажи я олово́, онъ бы п написа́ль = if I had said the word, he would have written

чужо́го не жела́й—своего́ не теря́й = if you don't covet other people's goods, you won't lose your own.

There is a very idiomatic use of the imperative which is especially common in narration and deserves mention. This is a combination of the imperative of the perfective verb ваяться = to appear (lit. to take oneself), viz. возымись with the words откуда ни = whencesoever, e. g.

вдругь, откуда ки возьмись, заяць! = suddenly, as if from nowhere, there appeared a hare!

Notice also the following idiomatic uses of the imperative:

того́ и смотри́, что онъ упадёть! = I am afraid that (sc. at any moment or before we know where we are) he will fall (lit. = look out!)

поминай какь звали! = you'll never see [him] again (lit. = remember how they called him, sc. his name)

кажись (instead of кажется) = it seems, one would think.

Another idiomatic use of the imperative is with the conjunction xore, when it acquires the meaning you may as well . . .

écan вы не поможете въ нашей просьов, то ужъ не знаемъ, какъ п быть: просто хоть въ петаю пользай! = if you don't help us in our request, we simply shan't know what to do: we may as well go and hang ourselves! (lit. climb into the noose)

ничего нельзя съ этикъ сдёлать, хоть брось = nothing can be done with this, you may as well fling it away.

Sometimes xorn = even though (= xorn) in this same construction:

хоть убей, не скажу = even though you kill me, I shall not tell.

§ 107. The Infinitive (imperfective and perfective).

The difference in meaning between the two aspects of the infinitive has already been explained; it remains to give some examples of the various uses of the infinitive.

In expressions of a general character the imperfective infinitive is always used, e.g.

писать книги непріятно = to write books is unpleasant while if a single event is referred to the perfective is of course necessary, e.g.

сколько у него денегь? трудно сказать = how much money has he? it is difficult to tell.

The following idiomatic use of the infinitive should be noticed: Hévero génath = there is nothing to be done

онъ пьёть отъ ночего д'ялать = he drink's because he has nothing to do (lit. from doing nothing)

говорять нечего (от нечего и говорять)! = there's nothing more to be said! (sc. that yoes without saying)

(cf. § 51)

ужь такь и быть = such is fate, or very well then, let's make the best of it!

стало-быть = consequently . . . or in that case, I suppose . . .

After verbs of beginning, continuing, ceasing, finishing, &c., the imperfective is used, e. g.

уже начали играть — they have already begun to play онь продолжать читать — he continued to read оны перестали говорать — they ceased talking я кончиль писать — I have finished writing

and of course all the more when these verbs are negatived.

After the verb to know how to, inf. ymeth (imperfective), chymeth (perfective), the imperfective and perfective infinitives respectively are used, e.g.

онь уметь делать фокусы — he knows how to do tricks съумете-ин вы это оделать? — will you know how to do this? After the verb to have time to, inf. youhnand (imperfective), youhna (perfective), the perfective is naturally always used, e.g.

я каждый день успаваю написать пять писемъ = every day I manage to write five letters

успъ́ете-ли вы э́то сдъ́лать сего́дня? = shall you have time to do this to-day?

After the verb to be able, inf. MOUL (imperfective), both aspects are used, according to the sense, e.g.

можете-ли вы это сд $\dot{\mathbf{x}}$ лать? = can you do this?

я не могу говорить (imperfective) = I can't speak (sc. am physically unable)

 π не могу́ сказать (perfective) = I can't say

я не могь писать = I could not write (sc. was physically unable)

я не могь написать = I could not write (sc. just then, that once), or I have been unable to write (sc. till now)

The perfective future of this verb is supplied as a rule by the perfective verb:

сьумьть = to know how to,

but this again is not used where it is a question of surmounting physical difficulties. In this case the Russians as often as not use the imperfective present mory, &c., illogically with future meaning, just as we do in English, e.g.

я могу́ придти́ за́втра = I can come to-morrow (sc. shall be able to).

The imperfective future of moun is not used; its place is taken by the phrase

буду въ состоянія + inf. = I shall be in a position to . . .

After the verb to wish, inf. xorbits (imperfective), either aspect can be used, e.g.

я хочу́ писать = I wish to write (sc. be an author)

я хочу написать письмо = I wish to write a letter

н не хочу говорить (imperfective) = I don't want to talk

я не хочý сказать (perfective) = I don't want to say

я хотыть говорить = I wanted to speak

я хотыть сказать = I meant to say.

¹ N.B. The perfective aspect of MOHD is CMOHD, pres. CMOY = I shall be able, but this is very seldom used; whenever it is, it implies the surmounting of great physical difficulty.

After verbs such as modáte = to like, предпочитать = to prefer, не мобáte = to dislike, the imperfective infinitive is of course the more usual.

After verbs of refusing, agreeing, &c., either aspect can be used, though the perfective is the commoner.

Use of the Infinitive instead of the Future.

This is common in such phrases as:

что-же дблать? = what are we to do? (what is to be done?)
написать-ли ему? = shall I write to him?
что написать? = what shall I write?
пойти и сказать ему = I shall go and tell him (or let us . . .)
какь нашь быть? = how are we to manage?
зачёмь продать? = why are you (or we) going to sell? (= why sell?)
сказать вамь = shall I tell you?
какь вамь сказать = (lit. = how shall I tell you?) how shall
I put it?

Use of the Infinitive with the conditional particle.

This occurs in such phrases as:

посмотрыть-бы? = shall we have a look!

Often it is merely the verb было that has been omitted, e.g. хороппо-бы потхать = it would be nice to go

попробовать-бы? = shall we have a try (or a taste)?

Use of the Infinitive instead of the Imperative.

This is especially common in public notices, e.g.

Exate marone! (imperfective) = drive at walking speed! (cf. aller au pas!)

никого не пускать! (imperfective) = don't let any one yo! наплевать! = spit! (sc. take no notice of it!)

The infinitive плевать can even be used in place of a finite verb, e.g.

п идовать на твоого́ хозя́мна! = I don't care in the least about your master!

Use of the Infinitive in subordinate sentences.

In final clauses the infinitive is used when the subject of the subordinate is the same as that of the principal sentence (cf. § 105), e. g.

я пишу өму, чтобы узнать правду = I am writing to him in order to find out the truth

онь дылаеть это, чтобы помочь мнь = he is doing this in order to help me.

In conditional clauses the infinitive is very common, e.g.

écan emý написать, онъ сдёлаеть сей-чась = if we write to him, he will do it at once

écли ванъ сказать, вы не повърнте = if I tell you, you won't believe [me].

Sometimes the écau is omitted, and the infinitive used in the principal as well as in the subordinate sentence, e.g.

много желать — добра не видать = if you wish for much, you'll see no good

пойти — такъ пойти! = if we are going, then let's go!

A very curious idiomatic use of the infinitive is mentioned here, as it is at first extremely puzzling to the foreigner; it is often, though not always, in the form of an answer to a question, and consists of the infinitive followed by the past or present of the same verb, while in meaning it always implies dissatisfaction or the non-fulfilment of a possibility, e.g.

Question:

слыхали-ли вы про это? = have you heard about this?

Answer:

слыхать-то слыхаль, но не върю = oh yes, I have heard, but I don't believe it.

Question:

видали-ли вы царя? = hace you seen the tsar?

Answer:

видать-то видаль! - oh yes, I've seen him (sc. but never spoken to him)

говорить-то она говорить, а ничего не далаеть = she talks a lot, but does nothing

уметь-то я умею, но я не хочу = I know how to [do it], but I don't want to.

§ 108. The Gerund (imperfective and perfective).

The gerund is used in Russian as in other languages to avoid the complication of an explanatory (usually subordinate) sentence.

The present gerund is naturally formed only from imperfective verbs; the past gerund from both imperfective and perfective. Whenever a gerund from a perfective verb does have the ending of the present gerund, viz. -s, it has perfective (past) meaning, e.g. from

inf. увидьть = to perceive

past perfective gerund

увидввши and увидя } = having perceived.

Examples of the use of the Gerunds.

бу́дучи въ го́родѣ, мы зашли́ къ вамъ = being in the town, we looked you up

прочитань письмо, онь побхаль = having read the letter, he departed

говоривъ три часа, онъ съль на своё мъсто = having spoken for three hours, he sat down in his place.

Some gerunds are very commonly used to express attitude, e.g.

писать лёжа = to write while lying down

пъть сидя = to sing sitting

говорить стоя = to speak standing up.

The following idioms should be noticed:

мо́лча = in silence

мало погодя́
or немного погодя́
Héxots = unsoillingly.

Some gerunds have quite lost their original meaning and are used as adverbs or conjunctions:

from xorbis = to wish

xorsi = although

(N.B. willingly is oxótho)

from apart = to look

apa = at random, without reflection, to no purpose

from cmotphete = to look

necmotphete + acc. = in spite of

cmotph = all according

e.g. смотря какъ = that's just as it may happen смотря по какой цънъ . . . = according to the price at which . . .

and from ymsts = to know how to, the popular form ymshoun = having the knowledge, e.g.

это надо сделать умеючи = you must have the knack to do this.

§ 109. The Participles (imperfective and perfective).

The participles are little used in conversation but are very common in literature.

There are naturally no present participles formed from perfective verbs. Past participles active are formed from almost all verbs of both aspects; past participles passive are formed from all perfective (transitive) verbs and from a considerable number of imperfective (transitive) verbs.

As regards the use of the participles it may be mentioned that some of them are used as nouns, e.g.

для курящихь = for smokers
для некурящихь = for non-smokers
бу́дущее = the future
въ бу́дущемъ = in the future
подлежа́щее = the subject (gram.)
сказу́емое = the predicate ,,
насъко́мое = insect

while in general it may be said that the present participles both active and passive are far more commonly used as pure adjectives without being considered as participles at all, e.g.

слѣдующій = following is always used for the next
въ слѣдующемъ году́ = next year
свѣдущій = knowing, learned
онъ очень свѣдущь по + dat. = he is very learned in . . .
настоящій = (1) present (of time), = (2) real
будущій = future
любиный = favourite
зависницій = dependent
нозависницій = independent.

Notice the idiom:

повидимому = apparently.

Present participles passive beginning with He-correspond to our e.g. in — able

e. g. неумоли́мый = inexorable неоцѣни́мый = invaluable.

From several verbs two forms of participle are in use, the regular present participle in -min (which is phonetically not Russian but Old Bulgarian) and the purely adjectival form in -min (which is the original Russian form of the present participle);

e.g. from ropérs = to burn (intrans.)

ropámin = burning

горичий = hot (esp. of water, food, &c.).

Notice the following present participles which are very common in letter-writing:

многоуважа́омый (or -an) . . . = much or deeply respected уважа́ющій (or -an) Вась глубоко———— (or -an) Вась = (deeply) respecting you

The past participle active, too, is but rarely used a participle. One or two forms are very commonly used as adjectives or nouns, e.g.

бывшій = former

прошедній = past 1 (esp. in grammar).

любящій (or -as) Вась = your loving.

Notice

сумасте́дшій = madman

from сойти съ ума = to leave one's mind.

The past participle passive is by far the most commonly used of all the participles, and even is not rare in conversation. This participle also often takes the place of the passive, e.g.

къть эта книга была переведена? = by whom was this book translated?

newly-formed from the perfective past upomean are far commoner.

¹ Though the forms прошлый = last прошлос = the past

къть эта пьеса написана? - by whom is this play written? она одъта въ чёрномъ = she is dressed in black.

In this case also many participles are almost entirely used as adjectives, e.g.

проклятый = accursed вышечноминутый = above-mentioned.

Notice the idioms:

Bánsto = occupied (of places in train, &c.)

за́перто = shut (of buildings)

биткомъ набито = chock-full.

§ 110. The Reflexive Verb and the expression of the Passive.

The reflexive verb can sometimes be used, as well as the passive participles, to express the passive, but as a matter of fact phrases which in other languages are in the passive are in Russian very often expressed in the active, e.g.

he is very much liked would be always translated его очень любять

he is hated peró очень не любять

this is not done = этого не двлають

though the phrase это не дылается is also common

this paper is little read = эту газету мало читають ог эта газета мало читается.

As a matter of fact, reflexive verbs in Russian are often merely the intransitive forms of otherwise transitive verbs, e.g.

> = to wash (trans.) мыть = to wash (intrans.) мыться купать = to bathe (trans.) купаться = to bathe (intrans.) продожжать = to continue (trans.) продожжаться = to continue (intrans.) = to be born родиться

(родить = to bear child)

but N.B.

онъ продолжаеть писать - he continues to write.

Some transitive verbs when used intransitively require the complete reflexive pronoun instead of the abbreviated form -cg, e.g.

чу́вствовать = to feel (trans.)
чу́вствовать себя́ = to feel (intrans.)
я себя́ чу́вствую нехорошо́ = I don't feel well
какъ вы себя́ чу́вствуете ? = how do you feel?

Many reflexive verbs which are intransitive have no corresponding transitive form, e.g.

сморкаться = to blow one's nose признаться = to confess улыбаться = to smile казаться = to seem оставаться = to remain становиться = to become случаться = to hope простудиться = to take cold

боя́ться = to fear is both transitive and intransitive.

The verbs

нравиться = to please любоваться = to admire наслаждаться = to touch, concern наслаждаться = to enjoy

are looked upon as intransitive, and take the first the dative, the second the genitive, and the last two the instrumental.

A few reflexive verbs are only used impersonally:

cmepkaetch = it is growing dark

mh'b xóvetch = I want to . . .

mh'b hesagopóbbtch = I don't feel well

mh'b he chátch = I can't get to sleep, I don't sleep well

mh'b chátch = I see in my dream, (he) appears to me in my dream

mh'b véimetch = I itch

pasymbetch = it is understood, of course.

Notice the curious use of the impersonal verb:

приходится (lit. = it comes itself)

1. = one has to

приходится играть = one has to play
(мий) пришлось заплатить = (l) had to pay
что придётся намъ сдилать? = what shall we have to do?

2. = stands in relation to (me) + inst.

она приходится мив двофродной сострой = she stands in the relationship of first cousin to me = she is my first cousin.

δ 111.

follows:

Impersonal Verbs.

Besides the impersonal reflexive verbs already mentioned, a few others, the use of some of which is peculiar, may be noticed here. Some do not call for comment, e. g.

болять = it hurts

у меня голова болить = my head aches

,, sy6= my tooth,, (this can of course also be used in the plural)

подмораживаеть = it is beginning to freeze.

It is freezing is usually expressed merely by the noun moposts = frost (sc. there is a frost), e. g.

сего́дня моро́зь = it is freezing to-day similarly сего́дня о́ттенель = it is thawing.

It is raining can only be expressed by:

дождь идёгь (= rain is going)

дождь льёть = it is pouring

cf. chbгь идёть = it is snowing

градь идёть = it hails

мо́лнія сверка́оть = the lightning is flashing

rpont rpemark = the thunder is thundering.

These phrases are expressed in the past and the future as

вчера́ шёль дождь = yesterday it rained

ночію выпать снъгь = there has been a fall of snow in the night

пошёть дождь = it has started raining

вчера́ быль сильный моро́зь = yesterday there was a hard frost

бýдеть дождя = it is going to rain (there will be of rain)

не будеть дождя = it is not going to rain

пересталь дождь = the rain has stopped.

The impersonal verb can also be used, e.g.

выпало много снъту (gen.) = much snow has fallen (it has fallen out much of snow)

замело́ от занесло́ доро́гу снѣгомъ = the road has got covered with snow.

To smell (intrans.) is expressed as follows:

пахнеть хороню́ = it smells nice пахнеть розами = it smells of roses nd by a curious impersonal use of the verb нести = to carry оть него несть духами = he smells of scent (lit. = it carries with scents from him).

To suffice:

хвата́еть (imperfective) = it suffices хва́тить (perfective) = it will suffice пелостаёть = it wants

e.g. недостаёть мнh ero = I miss him.

Notice the following:

достаточно довольно = that is enough

можно = опе тау

можно сказать = one may say

можно говорить = talking is allowed

можно? = may one?

нельзя́ = one may not, it is impossible

нельзя́ сказа́ть = one can't say

but N.B. неизвъстно = one can't tell (sc. know)

извъстно, что . . . = it is well known that

BO3MÓЖНО = it is possible

можеть быть

возможно, что откажется = it is possible that he will refuse можеть быть онь знаеть = perhaps he knows

the latter phrase is very commonly transposed: быть можеть невозможно = it is impossible

невозможно, чтобы онъ не зналъ = it is impossible that he does not know

должно́ быть = lit. it must be, but comes to mean it is probable, I expect

должно быть, онъ знаеть = I expect he knows

стало быть = lit. it has become (or begun) to be, but comes to mean consequently, I suppose

стало быть, вы его не любите? = then I suppose (I must conclude that) you don't love him?

стало быть — такъ! = I suppose it is so

не cráло + gen. = there is no more of

у него не стало денегь = his money came to an end

надо = it is necessary

мнъ надо это сдъдать сегодня = I must do this to-day
не надо = one must or need not, don't
не надо написать сегодня = it is not necessary to write (the letter)
to-day
сказать вамь? = shall I tell you?
нъть, не надо = no, don't
нужно = it is necessary
не нужно = не надо
слъдуеть = it is proper, ought (lit. = follows)
не слъдуеть = it is not correct
вамъ слъдовало-бы . . . = you ought to . . .

Notice the impersonal use of the verb to begin:

начина́еть темнъ́ть = it is beginning to grow dark but когда́ начина́ется конце́рть? = when does the concert begin?

Other common impersonal expressions are:

§ 112. How to express the verb to be.

The present tense of the verb быть = to be has long since become obsolete; it is either omitted absolutely or its place is taken, in writing by a long hyphen, in speaking by a pause, e.g.

я англича́нинъ = I am an Englishman это — мой сынъ = this is my son

whether the pause is made or not entirely depends on how much emphasis the speaker wishes to put in the subject of the sentence.

Notice the fact that the phrases this is, that is, there are, those are, are usually expressed by 500 irrespective of the number and gender of the predicate, e.g.

это мой жена — this is my wife это мой дэти — these are my children

unless of course special emphasis is laid on the pronoun, e.g.

The Ruhith ero, a stu — non = those books are his, but these are mine.

Here is, here are are often expressed by Both, e.g.

воть мой домъ = here is my house,

BOTE can also mean over there is; if very remote distance is pointed to BOHE TAME can be used.

The 3rd sing. of the present is still very commonly used in certain cases, e.g.

$$\tau \acute{o}$$
 ects = that is (to say)

T. e. =
$$i.e.$$

Combined with y and a pronoun it is the commonest way of saying have, e.g.

у меня́ есть = I have

у него́ есть = he has

though as often as not in these cases the verb eem is omitted.

In shops, restaurants, &c., when asking a question, ecrs must be used, e.g.

Question:

есть у вась икры́ ? (genitive) = have you any cariare?

Answer: '

ectb = we have,

the negative answer is always

нъть or нъту = we have not.

HETE is really a contraction of He ecre, and has come to be the ordinary word for no; it also means there is not and thus have not, e.g.

у меня́ нъть = I have not

у меня нъть отца = I have no father.

To ects is sometimes added the interrogative particle -ли, though ects by itself, if the voice is inflected accordingly, is quite sufficient to indicate the question.

Есть-ин is apt to sound like \acute{e} син (= if), and \acute{e} син is in fact a corruption of \acute{e} сть-ин.

Hътъ-ли у васъ? is also a very common way of saying have you got?

Hangeren-ли у васъ? from найти (= to find) is also much used to express the same thing.

Ecra is also used for there is, there are in such cases as:

есть таків люди, которы́в не любять икры = there are such people," who don't like caviare

есть многія вещи, о которых в бы хотоль сь веми поговорить = there are many things about which I should like to talk to you въ этой книгъ есть много хорошаго = in this book there is much that is good.

The 3rd sing. eets and the 3rd pl. cyrs are also used in emphatic declarations or definitions; it should be noted, however, that cyrs is very little used, and that eets can be used for any of the three persons singular or plural, e.g.

Typréневъ любиль русскихъ какъ они есть = Turgenev loved the Russians as they are

жизнь есть трудь для будущаго поколиня = life is labour for the next generation.

Owing to the fact that corn is so seldom used, single adverbs acquire the meaning of whole sentences, e.g.

хо́лодно = it is cold
тепло́ = it is warm
жа́рко = it is hot
мо́жно = it is possible
на́до • = it is necessary
мнъ́ хо́лодно = I am cold, &c.

The 3rd sing. of the present of бывать, the imperfective frequentative of быть, is often used:

это часто бываеть = that often happens это никогда не бываеть = that never happens онъ у нась бываеть = he sometimes comes to see us.

The past tense of быть does not call for special mention. It is often used to express the idea of visits, e.g.

я быль у нихъ вчер $\hat{\mathbf{a}} = I$ went to see them yesterday.

The neuter is often used impersonally:

тамъ было двадцать человъкъ = there were twenty people there.

(For other uses of было and бывало cf. §§ 103, 104.)

The future 6ýgy presents no difficulties. Notice the idiom:

бу́деть! = enough!

(For uses of the future, conditional, imperative, and infinitive of 6mm cf. §§ 104-107.)

§ 118. Various forms of Imperfective and Perfective Verbs.

It has already been remarked that most perfective verbs are formed from imperfective verbs by prefixing a preposition to the latter, and that the preposition used for this purpose loses its meaning. It is impossible to tell which preposition in each particular case is used for the particular purpose of making the imperfective verb perfective, as various prepositions are thus used, e.g.

Imperfective.		Perfective.
смотрѣть	to look	посмотрѣть
писать	to write	написать
дъ́лать	to do	сдѣлать
знать	to know	узна́ть
•	and others.	

The only thing that can be said is that no is used in an infinitely greater number of cases for this purpose than any other preposition. But it must be remembered that while one preposition merely makes the imperfective verb perfective and loses its own meaning, all the other prepositions when compounded with the same verb both make the verb perfective and endow it at the same time with their own special meaning. For instance:

разсмотрять = to examine closely
приписать = to ascribe, to add in writing
передялать = to do over again, to alter.

These verbs, as has been remarked, are perfective; the imperfective verbs corresponding to them in meaning, i. e. compounded with the same preposition, are the so-called frequentative imperfective verbs, which form a subsidiary category of imperfective verbs. These verbs are frequentative (or iterative) for the most part only in name; the large majority of them are quite ordinary imperfective verbs. Their peculiarity is that even when they are preceded by a preposition they do not, like other verbs, become perfective. They remain imperfective, forming the ordinary imperfective verb corresponding to a perfective verb which has been made perfective by having a preposition added to it and at the same time been altered in meaning by that preposition. These frequentative imperfective verbs are all formed by some alteration of the stem of the verb, either by lengthening it or by

altering the vowel which precedes the infinitive ending. These verbs seldom occur in their simple form, i.e. uncompounded with a preposition, but one or two are quite commonly used, e. g.

бывать (from быть) = to be often это бываеть = that sometimes happens я у нихь бываю = I am in the habit of going to see them говаривать (from говорить) = to be in the habit of saying онь такь говаривать = he often used to say so.

Such verbs are really frequentative in meaning. But in the great majority of cases, i. e. when compounded with prepositions. they are merely ordinary imperfective verbs. They may have frequentative meaning, but this as a rule has to be specially expressed by the addition of some such word as vácto = often. E. g. sachbath is theoretically the frequentative imperfective from забыть (perfective) = to forget; я забываю may mean I often (or always) forget, but on the other hand it may mean merely I am forgetting. Similarly pastobaphbath = to converse is theoretically a frequentative imperfective from говорить, but it may mean either I converse or I am conversing. For this reason it is better not to label these verbs frequentative or iterative, but to call them what they are, in the great majority of cases, viz. compound imperfective verbs, in order to differentiate them effectively from the large number of imperfective verbs which are simple and from the perfective verbs the majority of which are compound, while some are simple.

It is now time to examine the various ways in which these compound imperfective verbs are formed.

In a large number of cases they are formed by the insertion of the syllable-hib- or -nb- between the stem of the verb and the infinitive ending. Compound imperfectives from almost all verbs ending in -ath and from many others besides are formed thus and belong to this category. Verbs of this formation which in their original form contain the vowel o in their stems, usually, but not necessarily, change this to a in the compound imperfective. The verbs are here arranged in series of four, e.g.

- 1. nuráre = to try = simple imperfective.
- 2. Honerate = to try = compound perfective with loss of meaning by preposition.

8. Remerian = to experience = compound perfective with retention of meaning by preposition.

4. HCHISTEBRATS = compound imperfective with retention of meaning by preposition. It must of course not be imagined that the particular compound perfective, with retention of meaning by the preposition, is in each example here given the only compound perfective formed from that verb. In the case of some verbs such compounds are very numerous; the examples here given are chosen at random, but they include only verbs that are commonly used:

Imperfective.		Perfective.
писать	to write	написать
приписывать	to ascribe	приписа́ть
делать	to do	сдѣлать
передельнать	to alter	передѣлать
смотреть	to look	посмотрѣть
разсматривать	to examine	разсмотрѣть
чита́ль	to read	почита́ть
•		(прочита́ть
прочитывать	to read through] прочесть
прочитывать	to read introdyn	alternative verbs
		identical in meaning
искать	to search	поискать
взыскивать	to exact	взыскать
работать	to work	поработать
зарабатывать	to earn	заработать
слушать	to listen	послушать
подслушивать	to overhear	подслу́шать
лома́ть	to break	сломать
пролаживать	to break through	проломать
строить	to build	постро́нть
устранвать	to arrange	устро́нть
см'я́яться	to laugh	засмъяться
оситивать	to deride	осивать
красть	to steal	украсть
обирадывать	to rob	обокрасть
Taryta	to pull	потянуть
стагивать	to tighten, close	стянуть
2 ×		

工

Those verbs of class III, the 1st sing. of whose present is affected by the personal ending -n (which changes into -y, cf. §§ 87, 88), are similarly affected in their compound imperfective forms, though no longer belonging to the same class, e.g.

Imperfective.		Perfective.
просить	to request	попросить
спрашивать	to ask (a question)	спросить
дави́ть	to squash	подавить
зада́вливать	to throttle	задавить

From a number of perfective verbs the compound imperfectives are formed by inserting -Ba- between the stem and the infinitive ending, e.g.

	Perfective.
to hit	побить
to kill	убить
to sing	спъть
to strike up a song	запѣть
to drink	вы́пить
 to spend on drink 	пропить
to cover	покры́ть
to uncover, open, discover	раскрыть
to wash (trans.)	вымыть
to wash (intrans.)	умыться
	to kill to sing to strike up a song to drink to spend on drink to cover to uncover, open, discover to wash (trans.)

Notice especially the verbs (for other simple perfective verbs cf. § 114):

Imperfective.		Perfective.
давать	to give	дать
pres. даю́		press дамъ
дввать pres. двваю	to put	дѣть pres. дѣну
-		• •.

and бывать = to be often, to happen (from быть = to be).

Some verbs of this category cannot be formed in complete series in this way, e.g.

Imperfective.		Perfective.
знать	to know	
у знавать	to learn (news), to recognize	узнать *

Imperfective. pres. узнаю́ узнаёшь		Perfective. pres. узнаю узна́ешь
	to take one's stand 1	стать pres. ctáну
устава́ть pres. устаю́	to grow tired	уста́ть pres. уста́ну
and many other	very common compounds	
болѣть	to be ill	
commonly used	only as impersonal	атетодав
болить	it aches	
заболѣва́ть	to fall ill	

Those verbs which, both in their imperfective and perfective aspects, have no preposition, i.e. do not require a preposition to form their perfective aspect, can of course also be compounded with any preposition in both aspects, the preposition always retaining its meaning, e.g.

¥ЛТЬ
юдать
ірода́ть
грида́ть
передать
іздать
раздать
воздать
зы́дать
10ДДА́ТЬСЯ
сдать
оздать
вадать
подать •

(N.B. Many of the compounds here given have other meanings besides those given here, and of course the same applies to other verbs.)

¹ For its other meanings cf. p. 214.

Imperfective.		Perfective.
двать	to put	дъть
одъвать(ся)	to dress	одъть(ся)
надівать	to put on	надъ́ть
раздѣва́ть(ся)	to undress	раздѣть(ся)
переодѣва́ть(си)	to change dress	переодъть(ся)
задъвать	to catch hold of	задъть
(-ставать)	to take one's stand	стать
переставать	to cease .	перестать
застава́ть	to find (sc. at home)	застать
доставать .	to obtain	достать
оставаться	to remain	остаться
встава́ть	to get up (sc. from bed)	встать
разставаться	to part (intrans.)	разстаться

Verbs with infinitives in -чь, -эть, -сти form their compound imperfectives by adding -ать to their stem, e.g.

Imperfective.		Perfective.
MOAP .	to be able	СМОЛР
помогать	to help	помо́чь
влечь	to drag	повлечь
привлекать	to attract	привлечь

The verb term forms its compound imperfective as follows:

Imperfective.		Perfective.
ъсть	to eat	побсть
съвдать	to eat up, consume	съвсть
надовдать(intra	ans.) to importune	надобеть (intrans.)

The cognate verb to dine:

Imperfecțive.	Perfective
объдать .	(пообъдать
OADMID.	1 отобъдать

is from the noun offigs = dinner.

Verbe of which the stem contains two adjacent consonants insert is or a between these in the compound imperfective, e.g.

Imperfective.		Perfective.
слать ¹	to send	послать
pres. maio		
высылать	to bani sh	выслать
жать .	to press	пожать
pres. жму		
прижима́ть	to squeeze	прижать
звать	to call	позвать
ргев. Зову́ называ́ть	to name	назвать
тере́ть	to rub	потере́ть
ргез. тру обтирать	to wipe	обтере́ть
жечь	to burn (trans.)	сжечь
pres. жгу зажигать	to light, kindle	заже́чь
ждать)	to wait	•
ргев. жду	to await	
ожидать)	to expect	
поджидать .	to wait (for)	по дожда́ть
дожиде́ться	to attain by waiting to await until (arrival)	- дожда́тьсн

There are several verbs of this kind which are never used except in composition, e.g.

Imperfective.		Perfective.
умирать	to die	умере́ть pres. умру́
начинать	to b e gin	н ача́т ь pre s. начн ý
		pres. navny

¹ This werb has an imperfective frequentative of its own, nochrane to send.

The verb - ATS (only used in composition with prepositions, of. § 88) forms its compound imperfectives as follows:

Imperfective.		Perfective.
[-имать]		[-atr-]
внимать	to attend, hear	внять (pres. not used)
занимать	to occupy, to borrow	занять
		ргез. займу́
_		займёшь
нанимать	to hire	наня́ть
		pres. найму́, &с.
N.B. понимать	to understand	понять
		pres. пойму́
		поймёшь, &с.
поднимать	to lift	подня́ть
(or подымать)		ргев. подниму
		поднимешь, &с.
принимать	to accept	принять
		pres. приму́
	•	примешь, &с.
снимать	to take off (clothes)	снять
•	to photograph	pres. снимý
		снимешь
N.B. —	to take	ВЗЯТЬ
cf. § 117	_	pres. возьму́
[взимать = to levy	* * *	возьмёнь
поймать	to catch	cf. § 117

In the case of this verb, the stems of which are -MM- and -LM-, the H between the preposition and the stem is explained by the fact that certain prepositions, e.g. CL and BL, originally ended in a nasal, which was dropped after such forms as CHRIL had become crystallized. On the analogy of these forms, the H was inserted between the preposition and the stem in other compounds of this verb.

The pasts of all these perfectives are заняль, заняла, заняло; заняли: поняль, поняла, поняль; понялы, &c., i.e. they are, as to be expected, formed from the infinitive.

§ 114. Perfective Simple Verbs.

Not all perfective verbs are compound. There is a fair number of simple verbs which are already perfective in themselves without the prefixing of any preposition.

Such verbs are

дать = to give дъть = to put стать = to take one's stand, to become, to begin.

Besides these there are two categories of simple verbs which are perfective; the first-contains verbs of various classes, most of them very common:

i	Imperfective.		Perfective.
	броса́ть	to throw	бро́сить
	кончать	to finish	ко́нчить
	ложиться	to lie down	лечь
	лишать	to deprive	лиши́ть
	падать	to fall	пасть
	прощать	to forgive	простить
	ся	to sa y good-by e	CH CH
	пускать	to let (go)	пустить
	рвшать	to decide	ariuu#q
	скакать	to leap	скочить
	становиться	to become	стать
	ступать	to step	ступить
	садиться	to sit down	състь
	хватать	to seize	хвати́ть
	я вля́ть ся	to appear	яви́ться

Of one verb the imperfective aspect is compounded with a preposition, while the perfective aspect is a simple verb, viz.

ποκγμάτь to buy κγπάτь

These verbs being perfective when they are simple, are none the less perfective when compounded with a preposition. Of the corresponding simple imperfective verbs, some when compounded with a preposition become perfective and require the formation of a compound imperfective, others remain imperfective.

Imperfective.	•	Perfective.
ступать	to step	ступить
поступать	to enter (an institution to behave) } поступить
рвшать	to decide	přimára
разрѣша́ть	to permit	разрёщить
являться	to appear	HBÁTLCH
объявлять	<i>to declare</i> but	объявить
бросать	to throw	бросить
выбрасывать	to throw out	выбросить выбросать
становиться	to become	стать
останавливаться	to stop	остановиться
садиться	to sit down	сесть
пересаживаться	to change trains	пересѣсть

The other category contains a number of verbs ending in -нуть, which by means of this ending connote a single (definitive, perfective) action, e.g.

Imperfective.	·	Perfective.
глядви	to look	глянуть
двигать	to move (trans.)	дви́нуть
крича́ть	to cry out	крикнуть
кидать	to fling	ки́нуть
Maxátь	to wave	махнуть
плевать	to spit .	плюнуть
совать	to shove	су́нуть
тро́гать	to touch	тро́нуть
шептать	to whisper	шепнуть

It is important not to confuse these with other simple verbs ending in -hyps which are imperfective, e.g. they to pull, which are made perfective in the ordinary way, viz by prefixing a preposition, norshyts, kpshhyts = to grow strong, compound perfective orpanhyts. These verbs in -hyps being perfective are naturally also perfective when compounded with a preposition; the corresponding simple imperfective verbs are usually lengthened by the already familiar process (insertion of -hib- or -hib-) to form the corresponding compound imperfective, e.g.

Imperfective.		Perfective.
глядъть	to look	глян ут ь ¹
взгля́дывать	to look up	взглянуть
COBÁTA	to shove	су́нуть
высовывать	to shove out	высунуть
тро́гать	to touch	тронуть
дотрогиваться	to come into (physical) contact with	дотронуться
крича́ть	to cry out	крикнуть
вскрикивать	to scream	вскрикнуть
Notice		
кидать	to fl in g	ки́нуть
прикидываться	to pretend to be but	прикинуться
покида́ть and	to abandon	поки́нуть
висеть	to hang (intrans.)	повиснуть

Some verbs only used in composition with prepositions cannot be formed in complete series, e.g.

Imperfective.		Perfective.
обманывать	to deceive	обмануть
вздыха́ть	to sigh	вздохнуть
исчезать	to disappear	исчезнуть
привыкать	to grow accustomed to	привыкнуть
отвыкать	to disaccustom oneself to	отвыкнуть

§ 115. Imperfective Compound Verbs.

Conversely not all compound verbs are perfective. We have already seen that the prefixing of a preposition does not necessarily make a verb perfective, e.g. pastobaphbath = to converse, youngers = to kill, nonymath = to buy, nocrymath = to behave. Besides these there is a very large number of compound imperfective verbs which form a class by themselves. These correspond in meaning to a series of compound perfective verbs ending mostly

¹ A perfective verb поглядѣть also exists.

in the or the and belonging to class II. The corresponding compound imperfectives are formed not by lengthening the root with additional syllables, but by altering the infinitive ending from the or the total arms, thus making them verbs of class I. In the course of this alteration the phonetic changes observable in the 1st sing. of the present of verbs of class II (palatalization of the last consonant of the stem and substitution of the ending to forth, e.g. became from budgets, or insertion of a, e.g. another from another) are reproduced throughout the whole of the compound imperfective owing to the influence of the palatal vowel a, which in certain cases becomes a (i.e. the transport of the compound imperfective owing to the influence of the palatal vowel a, which in certain cases becomes a (i.e. the transport of the compound imperfective owing the influence of the palatal vowel a, which in certain cases becomes a (i.e. the transport of the compound imperfective owing the influence of the palatal vowel a, which in certain cases becomes a (i.e. the transport of the compound imperfective owing the influence of the palatal vowel a, which in certain cases becomes a (i.e. the transport of the compound imperfective owing the influence of the palatal vowel a, which in certain cases becomes a (i.e. the transport of the compound imperfective owing the transport of the compound imperfective owi

Imperfective.		Perfective.
встрвчать	to meet	встрѣтить
воображать	to imagine	вообразіть
выражать	to express	выразить
навѣща́ть	to visit	навѣсти́ть
объяснять	to explain	объяснить
ошибаться	to be mistaken	ошибиться
otbřata	to answer	отвѣтить
перемѣня́ть	* to change	перемѣни́ть
повторять	to repeat	повтори́ть
получать	to receive	получить
позволять	to permit	позволить
посвијать	to visit	посѣтить
ударя́ть	to strike (trans.)	уда́рить
убъждать	to convince	убъдить
употреблять	to use	употребить
Notice вѣшать	to hang (trans.)	повѣсить
	and many others.	

In the case of a few verbs which are used in their simple forms it is possible to form the already familiar complete series of four, e.g.

Imperfective.		Perfective.
ставить	to put	поставить
оставлять	to leave	оставить

and many other very common compounds.

Compound Imperfectives formed by change of accent.

In the case of a few verbs the form of the compound imperfective differs from that of the simple imperfective (except for the addition of the preposition) only in the position of the accent, e.g.

Imperfective.		Perfective.
падать	to fall	[пасть] 1
пропадать	to get lost	пропасть
notice	also the very common	verbs
попадать	to hit upon, to happen of	п попасть
сы́пать	to scatter	посыпать
pres. сы́плю, сы́плешь		pres. посыплю, посы- плень
засып ат ь	to cover by strewing	засы́пать
ргев. засыпаю		pres. засы́плю, засы́- плень
notice also the	very common variation	ns of this verb
засыпать	to fall asleep	засну́ть
просыпаться	to awake	проснуться
двигать	to move (trans.)	дринуть
ргез. двигаю		•
and движу		•
подвигать	to move up to (trans.)	подвинуть
sometimes	the r is retained in the	perfective
воздвигать	to erect	ноздв и́гнут ь
6 bran	to run	побъ́гать
набъг а ть	to avoid	(избѣжа́ть С избѣгнуть

§ 116. Simple Imperfective Verbs with two forms.

There is a certain number of simple imperfective verbs which have two distinct forms, distinct, though cognate in meaning. They are both equally imperfective, but while one describes an action that is actually in progress, the other connotes potentiality

Balta Garage

¹ The compound perfective ynacth, pres. ynagý (compound imperfective ynagath), is more commonly used than пасть.

or habit. The former are called actual simple imperfectives (sometimes called concrete), the latter potential simple imperfectives (sometimes called abstract). A good example is the verb to go (sc. on foot); to express this there are two distinct imperfective verbs:

- 1. итти (sometimes spelt идти)
- 2. ходить.

The first means actually to go or to be going, the second potentially to go or to be in the habit of going. Examples:

куда́ вы ндёте? = where are you going? (вс. now)

хо́дито-ли вы въ театръ? = do you go to the theatre? (sc. ever or often)

я иду гулять = I am going for a walk

я уже́ хожу́ = I can now walk (sc. after an illness).

The verb to fly is:

- 1. летъть
- 2. летать

воть летить аэроплань! = there is an aeroplane flying! итицы летають = birds fly

The verb to carry is:

- 1. нести
- 2. носить

почтальо́нъ несёть вамъ письмо́ = the postman is bringing you a letter

я всегда ношу калоши = I always wear galoshes.

These verbs are the following:

Actual.		Potential.
inf. блесть́ть	to shine	б лист ать
pres. { блещу́ блести́шь		блист а́ю блист а́ еппь
inf. бѣжа́ть pres. { бѣгу́ бѣжа́шь	to run	бѣгать бѣгаю бѣгаешь
pres. { Bestú Bessim.	to convey	возя́ть вожý вознінь

inf.

		*
Actual.		Potential.
вести	to lend	водить
Веду		вожу
д ведёшь		водишъ
гнать	to drive, chase	гоня́ть
гоню́		гоня́ю
гопишь		&c.
идти	to go (on foot)	ходить
иду́		хожу́
идёшь		хо́дишь
летъть	to fly	летать
лечý	,	летаю
летишь		&c.
ломить	to break	ломать
ломлю́		ломаю
ломишь		&c.
лъзть	to climb, clamber	ла́зить
лвзу	•	лажу
лвзешь		лазишь
нести	to carry, bear	носить (to wear)
несу	•	ношу
несёшь		носишь
ПЛЫТЬ	to float, sırim	пла́вать (to swim)
плыву	or your, out me	плаваю
плывёшь	•	&c.
noestá	to crawl	ползать
ползу		ползаю
Horsemb		&c.
садить	to set, plant	сажать
Carrý		caráio
с типъ		&c.
hrate	to go (in any way	ъ́здить
Аду	except on foot, e.g.	вэжу
Ахешь	by train or on horseback)	вадинь

Two verbs belonging to this category are defective, vis.

Actual.		Potential.
ви́дъ́ть ви́жу	to see	вида́ть
видишь (sometin	nes contracted to вишь)	•
слышать слышу слышинь	to hear	слыха́ть

The presents of the potential imperfectives of these verbs are not used; the infinitives and the pasts are, on the other hand, quite common, especially in negations and interrogations, e.g.

eró не видать = he is not to be seen (sc. I can't see him)

сдыхали-ли вы этого пъвца? = have you ever heard this singer?

When these verbs are compounded with prepositions it is usually the actual imperfective which forms the compound perfective with loss of meaning by the preposition, though such are also sometimes formed by the potential imperfective. It is also the actual imperfective which forms the compound perfective with retention of meaning by the preposition. On the other hand it is the potential imperfective which forms the compound imperfective with retention of meaning by the preposition:

Imperfective.	•	Perfective.
лететь (actual) лететь (potential	to Ay l)	полетъ́ть
перелетать	to fly over	перелетьть
вести́ водить	to lead	повести
проводить	{ to lead through } to spend (time) }	провести
везти возить	to convey	повезти
привозить	to bring (in a conveyance)	привести

Imperfective.		Perfective.
нести	to carry	понести
носить	. to wear	поносить 1
приносить	to bring (by hand)	принести
идти́ ходить	to go (on foot)	по йт и́ сходи́ть ²
приходи́ть	to come (on foot)	прійти (or придти́)
находить	to find	найти́
проходить	to pass	пройти́

Needless to say, both forms of all these verbs have many other compounds besides those given here.

The two verbs видъть and слишать have the following perfectives:

Imperfective.		Perfective.
видьть	to see	увидѣть
видать		увидать
слышать	to hear	услы́шать
слыха́ть		услыха́ть

The presents of увидъть and услышать are very common, being the ordinary (perfective) futures of видъть and слышать, e.g.

я увижу его завтра = I shall see him to-morrow.

The presents of увидать and услыхать are never used. Their pasts on the other hand are quite common, and it is to be noticed that there is no essential difference in meaning between

увидаль and увидаль

¹ This verb is seldom used, the perfective future of нести (without idea of any particular direction) is понести; from носить (which usually, but not always, means to wear) the imperfective future is naturally бу́ду носить, while I shall wear (= I shall put on) is надыну from надыть.

cxogars has a special meaning, viz. to go, with the implication of speedy return, e.g.

H CLORY HA HOTTY = I shall just run round to the post (and shall be back woon).

There is also an imperfective verb execute (perfective contú) = to come or go off, e.g.

ONE CHÁRATE OF YMÉ - he is going off his head CHÁRACH, COMTÁCE - to foregather.

or between

услыхаль and услышаль.

Notice the compounds:

Imperfective.		Perfective.
зави́довать	to envy	позавидовать
ненави́дѣть	to hate	возненавидѣть
предвидѣть	to foresee	(only imperfective).

Two verbs deserve special mention, viz. 65xars and axars; these form their compound perfectives from the actual imperfective, but the corresponding compound imperfective is formed not from the potential imperfective but from yet a third imperfective form of the word, only used in composition:

побѣжа́ть
побъгать
в перебіжать
(избѣжать and (избѣгнуть
у убъжать
прибъжа́ть
urse to прибъгнуть
t on foot) поѣхать съѣздить ³
пріѣхать
увхать

плыть and лёзть have the same peculiarity, forming their compound imperfectives not with the verbs плавать and лазить but with -плывать and -лёзать; they are not given in full here, because they are of much less common occurrence.

¹ Éxate and Éздять form parallels to идти and ходить, e.g.

я кду вь Лондонъ = I am travelling to London

я наждый годь взжу въ Россио = I travel to Russia every year.

² събадить forms a parallel to сходить and means to take a journey and come back soon, e.g.

Busph Mid Cheadran Red Brakónius — yesterday we drove to see some acquaintances (sc. we didn't stay long or we came home again the same day).

It has already been mentioned that the potential imperfectives are not often used to form the compound perfectives, but usually to form the compound imperfectives, e.g. перелетать, проводить, &c. But we have seen that they can be so used, e.g. сходать, събадить. Besides these there are, however, numerous instances of the use of the potential imperfectives to form a compound perfective; in such cases the corresponding compound imperfective is formed not from the actual imperfective but by the already familiar process of the insertion of -ыв- ог -ыв-, or by some other alternative form. It is to be noticed that several potential imperfectives which are in themselves intransitive become transitive when they enter this category of compound perfectives. For the sake of lucidity the verbs are repeated in full:

Imperfective.		Perfective.
нести	to carry	понести
носить	to wear	поносить
приносить	to bring (by hand)	принести
изнашивать	to wear out (materials, clothes)	пзносить
notice also		
выносить	to carry out, to endure •	вынести
вынашивать	to wear out (clothes)	выносить
вести́ водить	to lead	повести
проводить	to spend (time)	провести
провожать	to accompany (walking) to see off (at station)	проводить
идти́	to go (on foot)	пойти́
ходить		сходить
уходить	to go away	yatú
ухаживать ¹	•	уходить ³
фхать	to go (except on foot)	поѣхать
ВЗДИТЬ		съвздить 🕠
разъйзжаться	to depart in different directions to miss one another on the road	разъћхаться
разъезживать	to wear out (the road with traffic)	

F = to flirt with or to nurse; construction: 3a + instrumental.

2 = to waste (money), to wear out (a horse).

and somewhat anomalously

Imperfective.

Perfective.

135-ВЗЖИТЬ { to travel over all parts of, visit } нэъ-вэдить

ехнаиstively

Notice the causative verbs:

расти to grow (intrans.) вырасти выращать to make grow вырастить and поить = to water (animals)

§ 117. Anomalous Verbs.

from unt = to drink.

A few simple imperfective verbs have as compound perfectives corresponding to them in meaning verbs from other stems; these are:

Imp	erfective.		Perfective.
pres.	бр ат ь берў берёшь	to take	взять pres. возьму́ возьмёшь
pres.	быю [®] быю [®]	to hit	уда́рить pres. уда́рю уда́ришь
pres.	класть кладу́ кладёшь	to put	положи́ть pres. положу́ положишь
pres.	ловить ловлю́ ловишь	to catch	пойма́ть pres. пойма́ю пойма́ешь
pres.	говорить говори говоришь	to say, tell	сказа́ть pres. скажу́ ска́жень

Several of these verbs have compound perfectives or imperfectives formed from the same stem as well as those given here, but it has so happened that e.g. the verb chasars has come to be the regular perfective corresponding in meaning to rosopars; there is a perfective verb norosopars, but it means to have a little talk, while ckasárs and rosopárs both mean to say or tell (rosopárs can also mean to talk). It is thus possible to form fuller though incomplete series of these verbs, e. g.

```
Imperfective.
                                                  Perfective.
брать
             = to take
             = to collect
собирать
                                                 = to collect
                                      собрать
ВЗИМАТЬ
             = to levy money
                                                 = to take
                                     _R39Th
SUTE
             = to hit
                                      побить
                                                 = to hit a little
<u>vбивать</u>
             = to kill
                                      убить
                                                 = to kill
ударять
             = to hit
                                     ударить
                                                 = to hit
класть
             = to put
укладывать
             = to pack (trans.)
                                      стіжоку
                                                 = to pack (trans.)
                       (intrans.)
                                                            (intrans.)
ATÈTRICII
             = to suppose
                                     положить = to put
                                                   to suppose
  Notice the idioms:
             подагается? = is it included (in the price)?
              положимъ
                          = let us suppose
JORÚTL
             = to catch
нала́вливать = to catch a lot
                                      наловить = to catch a lot
                                     LIOHMÁTH
                                                 = to catch
                                        Cf. the cognete verb
понимать
             = to understand
                                      аткноп
                                                 = to understand
                                      поговорить
                                                    = to talk a little
говорить
             ' = to say, tell, talk ←
pasiobáphbath = to converse
уговаривать = to try to persuade
                                      уговорить
                                                    = to persuade
отговаривать = to try to dissuade
                                      атировотто
                                                    = to dissuade
OTRÁSLIBATL(CH) = to refuse
                                      отказать(ся)
                                                    = to refuse
УКАЗЫВАТЬ
               = to point out
                                      vказа́ть
                                                    = to point out
OKÁSLIBATLCH
               = to turn out to be
                                      оказаться
                                                    = to turn out to be
приказывать
                                                    = to order
               = to order
                                       приказать
SAKÁSKISKÉK
                                      заказать
                                                    = to ., register
Haráseibate
                                      наказать
                                                     = to punish
               = to punish
LORÁSHIBAT
              = to prove
                                      локазать
                                                     = to prove
поназывать
              = to show
                                      noranáti.
                                                     = to show
Pascráshibath - to relate
                                      Dascrasáth
                                                     = to relate
CRÉSLIBATA
                                     >сказа́ть
                                                     = to tell, say
                               P 8
```

Imperfective.

Perfective.

[Cf. кáжется = $\begin{cases} it \ seems, \\ sc. \ I \ thin. \end{cases}$

каза́лось = it seemed

показа́лось = it seemed

Certain verbs are only perfective, e.g.

очутиться = to find oneself suddenly anywhere очнуться = to wake up anywhere состояться = to take place.

Others are only imperfective, e.g.

зависьть = to depend предчувствовать = to have a preзначить = to meansentiment of недоумъвать = to be perplexed, пресл $^{\circ}$ довать = to persecute принадлежать = to belong to hesitate нуждаться = to need содержать = to contain, maintain повиноваться = to submit toсодъйствовать = to help, contribute to (morally) . подлежать = to be open to (e.g. doubt) coжaл ftb = to regretподражать = to imitate cocтoять = to consist покровительствовать = to protect сочу́вствовать = to sympathize предстоять = to be imminent ctóntb = to cost

Others can be used as imperfectives or perfectives, having only the one form, e.g.

веля́ть = to order, command жениться = to marry (of the man only) ра́нить = to wound.

Some verbs, apparently perfective, are derived from compound nouns, e.g.

 Imperfective.
 Perfective.

 разум вется (разумъ)
 it is understood

 заботнъся (забота)
 to trouble about anything (забота)

 насхъдовать to inherit (насхъдинкъ)
 унасхъдовать (насхъдинкъ)

PREPOSITIONS IN COMPOSITION WITH VERBS, NOUNS, ETC.

§ 118. The following is not intended to be a complete list of all the various meanings acquired or lent by prepositions in composition; such a list to be exhaustive would require a whole book to itself.

Here only some of the most important varieties of meaning are given as a help to the beginner, who is often puzzled by the apparently numberless compound words. It is important to remember that most of the prepositions can be used merely to make a perfective out of an imperfective verb. Also that in many cases besides this the original meaning of the preposition is barely apparent. In beginning to read Russian it is always helpful to cut off the preposition or prepositions of any unfamiliar compound word, when the root (and the meaning) will often become clear.

There are four prepositions which are only used in composition, viz. Bo3-, BM-, Hepe- (Hpe-), and pas-.

воз- (вз-)

The meaning is originally up, e.g.

воздвигать ipfv. = to erect

but this often lapses, e.g.

возражать ipfv. = to reply возразить pfv. = ,,

sometimes it merely forms the perfective:

возненавидьть pfv. = to conceive hatred for возможно = it is possible.

When the word with which it is compounded begins with a vowel it sometimes, though by no means always, contracts to B3-, e.g.

взойти́ pfv. = to rise (of the sun, &c.) взять pfv. = to take

but pres. возьму́ = I shall take

взморые = deep water (at sea, as opposed to the shallow water of an estuary).

212

If the word with which it is compounded begins with K, X, II, T, it becomes BOC-, e.g.

восхо́дь со́днцы = sunrise
восто́кь = the East
Воскресе́ніе = Sunday (Resurrection)
воспрещать ipfv.
воспретать pfv. } = to forbid

it sometimes appears as BC- before words beginning with these same consonants:

всходить ipfv. = to rise вскричать pfv. = to scream.

Care must be taken not to mistake BO3- for BE in composition with words beginning with 3, c.

вы-

usually = out, e.g.

выходить ipfv. = to go out (on foot) выйти pfv. = ,, ,, выходь = exit , выставка = exhibition

it sometimes means thoroughly

BECERRATE) = to thrash thoroughly

BESTADOPORTE Prov. = to get thoroughly well

sometimes merely to form the perfective

вышить pfv. = to drink (sc. to drink to the end) in composition with нести and несить cf. § 116.

A peculiarity of this preposition in composition with verbs is that when it makes the verb compounded with it perfective it attracts and holds the accent throughout, while if the compound verb is imperfective the accent remains on the stem of the verb. e.g.

выражать ipfv. } = to express

 Imperfective.
 Perfective.

 вываживать
 to drive out
 вываживать

 вываживать
 to break in horses
 вываживать

Cf. also in composition with meers and hocers § 116.

In composition with nouns and adjectives the accent is always on BH-, e.g.

BUTOBOYL = pronunciation, lecture (sc. scolding)
BUBO3L = export.

пере-

generally = over, across, afresh

переходить ipfv. перейти́ pfv. } = to cross on foot

перевзнать ipfv. = to cross (by boat or rail)
перевлать pfv. to move (into a new house)

перем'яна = change (e.g. in the weather) переписка = correspondence перевозъ = ferry

переводъ = translation переваль = watershed

It can imply excess:

пересолить = to over-salt.

Another form of this preposition is

Notice Hempenanno - without fail.

npe-

which is also used to express the ideas round, over, or across.

претворить ipfv. } = to transform, convert претворить pfv. } = to hand over to, to betray предавать ipfv. } = to hand over to, to betray преданный = devoted преступление = transgression, crime прецать = boundary, region предать = boundary, region превышать ipfv. = to surpass (trans.) презирать ipfv. = to despise прерывать ipfv. } = to interrupt прерымущество = advantage

In composition with other prepositions:

превосходить ірfv. } = to excel превосходительство = Excellency превосходительство = excellent! преподавать ірfv. } = to teach, lecture on.

In composition with adjectives it lends superlative meaning, e.g.

прекрасный = very beautiful, splendid (the original meaning of красный was bright) cf. § 59.

pa3-

usually = asunder, dis-, di-

разводь = divorce
размънать pfv. = to change (money)
размърь = dimension
раздълать ipfv.
раздълать pfv. } = to divide, distribute
разбинать ipfw
разбить pfv. } = to break (e.g. glass or china).

It can also as it were amplify any activity, e.g.

разгова́ривать ipfv. = to converse разгово́ръ = conversation разска́зывать ipfv. } = to narrate разска́зъ = a tale развра́ть = depravity разводи́ть ipfv. = to breed.

It often corresponds to our un-:

раздѣва́ться ipfv. } = to undress oneself pаздѣться pfv. } = to undress oneself pазва́тіе = development (lit. unwinding) pазва́лины = ruins pазстра́нвать ipfv. } = to unsettle, upset (morally). paзстро́нть pfv. } = to unsettle, upset (morally).

It sometimes means quite, e.g.

я не разслышать $= I \ didn't \ quite \ hear.$

Notice the following:

умъ = mind

pазумъ = intellect

умный = clever

pазумный = sensible (with common sense)

pазсчёть = calculation

pазсканный = absent-minded.

The ъ is retained before palatal vowels, e.g. pasь бхаться pfv. = to break up (of a party).

When и follows it becomes ы, e.g.

разыскать from разъ + некать.

Before к, к, п, т, ц, ч, ш, щ раз- becomes pacрасходы = expenses.

Occasionally, usually when the accent falls on it, pas-becomes pos-, e.g.

розлимь, розлима = to pour out (tea), to spiil

alternative past of раздить pfv., the other being раздиль, &c. росписание повздовь = time-table of trains (on the wall).

In composition with other prepositions:

распродажа = sale (in shops)
расположе́ніе = disposition, temperament
распоряже́ніе = disposition (control), arrangement
распростраце́ніе = propagation.

The other prepositions used in composition are:

безъ

= (without), dis-, un- (this never changes to бес-)
безноко́нть ipfv.)
обезноко́нть pfv.)
безноко́нть pfv.)
безусло́вно = unconditionally, absolutely
безкоры́стный = disinterested
безнокойный = anxious
безобра́зный = horrible, disgraceful (lit. having no pattern,
so, unlike anything).

When u follows it becomes u:

безынённый = nameless (безь + ims).

Bb (**B0**) = in, into

входи́ть (вь) ipfv. войти́ (вь) pfv. входь = entrance

вводить ipfv. ввести pfv. ввести pfv. ввести pfv. влюбиться (въ) pfv. в to fall in love with включительно в inclusively.

Notice

вставать ipfv. } = to get up (from bed) встать pfv. } = to get up (from bed) внимание = attention.

The z is retained before vowels, e.g.

Spixate pfv. = to ride or drive into.

A0
= up to, to the end, pre-

доходить (до) ipfv. дойти (до) pfv. дойхать (до) pfv. = to reach (except on foot) доходь = income договорь = treaty доказательство = proof допотопный = antediluvian докладь = lecture (on anything) достать = to obtain.

За

— behind

заходъ со́янца — sunset

закать ", ",

It has many uses not obviously though indirectly connected with this meaning:

заходить кь ipfv. зайти къ pfv. задержка = delay задожить = to mortgage закладь = pledge, wager заказъ = order (for anything, e.g. goods) заказное письмо = registered letter заплатить pfv. = to pay (платить ipfv.) заставлять ipfv. заставать ipfv. заставать pfv. заставать ipfv. заставать pfv. заставать ipfv. заставать ipfv

* 3a often gives the meaning: to start doing anything, e.g.

засмъяться = to break into laughter

which is the perfective of

смъ́мться = to laugh запъть pfv. = to burst into song заговорить pfv. = to start talking.

With a reflexive verb it can mean to forget oneself, be lost in doing anything:

зачитаться pfv. = to read till you lose sense of time and place.

нзъ (нзо)

= out

нздавать ipfv. } = to edit, publish нздать pfv. } = to edit, publish нзданіе = e.lition, publication нздоженіе = exposition.

The 1 is retained before vowels, e.g.

изънснение = explanation.

When H follows it becomes M, e.g.

найоканный = exquisite, far-fetched.

e.

Before K, X, II, T, Y, II it becomes HC-:

нсходъ = issue (out of a difficulty)
исполнять ipfv. } = to fulfil
исполнять pfv. } = to fulfil
исключение = exception
исключетельно = exclusively.

между

= inter- (but never with verbs) междунаро́дный = international.

Ha

= on to

находить ipfv. найти́ pfv. надежда = hope (something put on) надежться = to hope.

Notice

насл'ядникь ^c heir
на́сморкь = cold (in the head)
нау́ка = science
наро́дь = people, nation
нало́женнымь платежёмь = pay on delivery
настоя́щій = present, actual, real
наступа́ющій = coming, imminent
нам'вреніе = intention.

Often with the meaning of to do anything to the full, or largely на всться pfv. = to eat one's fill накупить pfv. = to buy a quantity of наслаждаться ipfv. = to enjoy oneself начитанный = well-read.

Preceded by a negative it expresses the idea not to be able to have enough of

ненаглядный = that one cannot feast one's eyes on long enough ненасытный = insatiable.

. надъ = over

надиись = inscription принадлежать ipfv. = to belong.

0 (06- 060)

= about

обходить ipfv.) = to go round

необходимый = essential

 $\left. egin{array}{ll} {
m oбдýмывать} & {
m ipfv.} \\ {
m oблумать} & {
m pfv.} \end{array}
ight\} = to \ think \ over$ ошибка = mistake (= missing the mark).

This meaning is often not apparent:

обижать ipfv.) = to offend (lit. look round) обидѣть pfv.

опечатка = misprint

огово́рка = reserve, limitation

обълъ = dinner

огородъ = kitchen-garden.

The b is retained before a palatal vowel, e.g. объяснение = explanation.

When I follows it becomes II, e.g.

обыскь = inquiry, search.

OTT (OTO) = away from

отходить (оть) ipfv.) = to go away from отойти (оть) pfv.

отлично! = excellent! отрызать = to cut off

sometimes oro- as in отослать = to send away.

The b is retained before vowels, e. g. отыбаль = departure.

When и follows it becomes ы, е. g. OTHERATE = to find by dint of searching. The commonest use is to make imperfective verbs perfective; in doing so it usually connotes that the action will be of less duration or of less importance than that expressed by the simple imperfective verb, e.g.

поговорить = to talk a little потанцовать = to dance a little посмъяться = to laugh a little.

But in a large number of cases it has lost all trace of its original meaning, e.g.

посылать ipfv. послать pfv. получать ipfv. получать pfv. посыщать ipfv. посыщать

Notice the following very common words, all compounded with no:

похоль " = campaign похожъ (на) = like (adj.) цо́хороны = funeral = bed (specifically bedding) постель поступокъ = act, behaviour посуда = crockery потеря = loss подержанный = second-hand поств = after последній = last послъдствіе = consequence последовать (за) pfv. = to follow after and hundreds of others.

Cf. сабдующій — next

всябдствіе + acc. — as a result of

сабдовать (за) ipfv. — to follow after

сабдать (за) ipfv. — to follow.

подъ (подо-)

= under

подходить (кь) ipfv. подойти (кь) pfv. поднимать ipfv. подымать pfv. поднить pfv. поддельный = counterfeit подходищё = suitable поддержка = support поджигательство = incendiarism подозрявать ipfv. = to suspect

The & is retained before vowels, e. g.

подъвздъ = porch, entrance.

подозрительный = suspicious.

When и follows it becomes ы, e.g.

подыскать = to match (e.g. colours), assort.

. (передъ) пред-

= fore (fore-), pre-

предсказывать ipfv. предсказать pfv. = to foretell предварительный = preliminary предпочитать ipfv. предпочесть pfv. = to prefer предпочесть pfv. предложение = offer, suggestion.

Notice:

предпринимать ipfv. предпринять pfv. предприять pfv. предприять = undertaking.

The z is retained before vowels, e.g.

предъявление = presentation (of a claim).

When я follows it may be written ы, e.g. предыдущій = preceding.

при

in composition often expresses the idea of motion towards or of the application of one thing to another:

npo

Notice:

пропускная бумата = blotting-paper простуда = cold (on the chest) напрокать = on hire

продавать ipfv. = to sell

пронграть = to lose (a game), to lose money at play.

(противъ) противо-= anti-

противодыйствовать = to counteract противорые = contradiction, inconsistency.

- (1) сравнение = comparison
 сходство = resemblance
 состоять (изъ, въ) ipfv. = to consist (of)
 согланиаться (съ) ipfv.
 согласяться (съ) pfv.
 } = to agree (with)
- (2) снимать ipfv. = { to take off (clothes) to take (photographs) ссылка = exile.

Sometimes the meaning is not apparent:

считать ipfv.) = to count, consider счесть pfv. | = to count, consider

HACTUTE = to the account of, as regards,
on account of

соборъ = cathedral

сомнънаться ipfv. = to doubt

събсть pfv. = to cat.

The n is retained before vowels, e. g.

When I follows it becomes E, e. g.

¥ = away

уходить ipfv. уйти́ pfv. } = to go away (on foot)

Ужжать ipfv. } = to depart (e. g. by rail)

Убирать ipfv. } = to clear away

Убрать pfv. } = to clear away

244 PREPOSITIONS IN COMPOSITION WITH VERBS, ETC.

But this primary meaning is often lost:

уставать ipfv. устать pfv. } = to grow tired

ухо́дь = looking after, care for

уъ́дь = district

убо́рная (вс. ко́мната) = lavatory

ука́зывать (на) ipfv. } = to point to

ука́зь = decree

униже́ніе = humiliation

умпрать ipfv. } = to die

удо́бно = convenient, comfortable

уго́дно = agreeable

вакь вакь уго́дно = just as you like.